



REALMS IN THE FIRMAMENT

BOOK 04

Fengling Tianxia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Realms In The Firmament

(天域苍穹)

by

Fengling Tianxia

(风凌天下)

Synopsis

Ye Xiao was a superior cultivator in his previous life. The three factions of the realm kill millions of people every time they attempt to seize cultivation resources. Wealthy towns turn to wastelands in just a single night. They cover up their crime with an assertion that the towns were suffering from pestilence and disasters.

They forcibly hold all the resources for cultivation, monopolize all valuable practice materials, and keep outsiders from cultivating so that only their three factions could cultivate in the realm. Ye Xiao declared war against the three factions in retaliation for their actions. He fought alone and ended up dying in vain. However, he is reborn into the mortal body of a 16-year-old boy. He will use the powers he cultivated in his last life and slaughter his way back into the Realm. The story begins!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Rain @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Chrissy / Arch @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 301: I Do Not Want to Be Reasonable!

[She has mentioned Master Bai. If I dare to say one more reckless word, things will go to a worse way, even a horrible way!

I don't want to beg like this without dignity, but I have no dignity now. Couldn't I just kneel down to her?]

Wan-Er was finally moved. She said, "You made it five billion! You are determined for it indeed. I don't have that much money. Even if I do, I won't spend it on just one Bone Ablutionary Dan bead. I am not as rich as the Sunlight Sect. It is an auction here after all. Since I don't have that money, even though I really want it, I can do nothing. I quit. You win."

"Puff!"

At the moment, the old man from the Sunlight Sect finally couldn't hold it anymore. He puked out blood while breathing heavily.

People all looked at each other in astonishment.

[This Lady Wan-Er truly is... cruel!

You never push a man too far, yet this Lady Wan-Er, she isn't just pushing it too far, she is pushing it so much further than just far,

and she is doing it again and again!

She actually pushed a man to spend five billion to buy a Bone Ablutionary Dan bead that is only 300 million!

He spent nearly twenty times more. Now, she actually taunts him, and she acts like she is forced to quit because she doesn't have enough money.

That is... too much?!]

However, what Wan-Er did not only made people feel sad for that old man, but also made them feel happy.

In recent years, the Sunlight Sect was almost the only strongest force. Every other sects or clans had been offended by them, yet they always didn't dare to say anything.

Now that the Sunlight Sect was insulted in the public, and they had to cowardly bear it, that was such a wonderful thing to see!

That was what everybody wished!

Only the Mu Clan people had some different feelings.

It was also in this salesroom, and it was also when selling some supreme dan beads, when one of their men was exactly using the Sunlight Sect's strategy to try snatch a supreme dan bead. That

was when they offended the Xiu of the Heavens. They got badly insulted, and over a hundred men of them died because of that.

Now in this place, and in the same auction, the Sunlight Sect was also trying to snatch some Supreme Dan bead, and they exactly messed with the people from the House of the Chaotic Storm.

And that person was Wan of the Clouds this time.

It was a much worse insult this time though!

Two times, the same place, the same scene, the same story...

The Mu Clan people only felt that their backs were cold. [Is this Ling-Bao Hall connected to the House of the Chaotic Storm? Or does it belong to the House of the Chaotic Storm?

How could it be so coincident otherwise? Two times people mess with the House of the Chaotic Storm? That is too far from a coincidence!]

Everybody in this salesroom today were well-informed men. How could they not think of what the Mu Clan could think about.

Now, everybody had the same question in mind, [Is Ling-Bao Hall an enrichment department of the House of the Chaotic Storm?]

They were all suddenly anxious and fearful about this idea.

“Lady Wan-Er, you are pushing too much talking this way...” That old man from the Sunlight Sect spoke in a piteous way with blood on his mouth. “We, the Sunlight Sect has never offended the House of the Chaotic Storm...”

It sounded with a sense of sorrow that spread in the air of the whole place.

[What on earth makes the House of the Chaotic Storm act like this?]

People were all concentrated, trying to hear what the House of the Chaotic Storm would say. Would they admit it, or would they deny it?

If they denied it, what was going on with all this then?

The ambience suddenly became cold and quiet!

At this moment, from the Sky No. 1 Room, a voice leisurely sounded. That voice was bland. “A Bone Ablutionary Dan bead that is worth five billion? I truly have never seen one before... Wan-Er, why don’t you take that dan bead up to me and let it open your master’s eyes.”

It was a voice of a young man.

When the voice sounded, everybody's heart heated up heavily at once!

Suddenly, they felt like unable to hear their own breaths.

[Master?

Wan-Er?

There should be only one man who dares to call her like that...

That...]

The next moment, Wan of the Clouds spoke in a respectful voice, "Yes! Your maid shall get it right away."

Their hearts heated up again, [Your maid?

Does that... Does that mean... the man who is talking is that man?!]

Everyone figured out who it was, yet nobody dared to say it.

[No wonder Wan of the Clouds would be so different. She should be soft and gentle, yet now she is tough. It was... because that man is here too!

That is right!

Since he is here too, not to mention an old man from the Sunlight Sect, even if all the senior cultivators and the leader of their sects were all here, they would have to bow to this man! His words mean the rule!

Nobody would dare to oppose it!

They would even be hundreds times more respectful than this old man!]

Everyone looked at the room of the Sunlight Sect with pitiful eyes.

There was even no sound of breath in there. It was all silence.

Wan of the Clouds shouted, “Didn’t you hear it? Are you deaf? My master want to see that five billion taels Bone Ablutionary Dan bead! Shouldn’t you bring it up quickly? Are you looking down upon my master?”

The crowd was all stunned, and then everybody was enlightened. They all nearly puked out blood.

[The House of the Chaotic Storm is truly never trying to be reasonable.

They forced others to raise the price, and he couldn't stop bidding. He couldn't even make a low price bid! The price was raised up from 300 million to 5 billion. They actually forced him to buy it.

It was obviously dissipating others fortune!

Yet they didn't stop there. After their opponent buys it, they actually asked him to take that item up to them! That just cost him five billion!]

Apparently, they were trying to make the Sunlight Sect waste that money!

The old man didn't even hold the dan bead.

It wasn't just insulting now. It was extermination!

However, even if she clearly said that she was exterminating them, so what? What could they do?

Who on earth dared to disobey Master Bai's words?

Whoever dared to was simply asking for death!

..

Chapter 302: Twisting the Knife!

The other two men from the Sunlight Sect looked at the old man. In their eyes, there was a sense of censure.

[Come on. You have been bowing for a long way over. You are nearly at the end of suffering it. Now that things are about to get pass, I cannot believe you said something like that at this very end and made it a worse situation now.

Honestly, it isn't egregious to say that, but it vividly shows your.

You can show it to many people, can't you? But you showed it to Wan of the Clouds! What the fxxk! You have been playing weak for ninety-nine steps, yet you just couldn't make it a hundred?

Why do you have to make troubles for yourself? Fine. Wan of the Clouds doesn't talk anymore. Master Bai does... The man who is thousands of times more horrible than Wan of the Clouds talked.

Now that he talks, the dignity of the Sunlight Sect will be stepped hard on the ground under his boot right now!

He won't show us any kindness!

It is already a big joke to spend five billion to buy a Bone Ablutionary Dan bead, even though it is in supreme level!

Now, we even spent the five billion, yet the dan bead is not going to be ours.

Isn't it a joke out of a big joke?

Five billion, for nothing?

Master Bai asked for it, who dares not to give it to him?]

The men from the Sunlight Sect were all carrying dark faces. They all knew, [From now on, Sunlight Sect will become a joke in the Land of Han-Yang. Our reputation is gone!]

The old man with white beard stood up and took a long breath out. "Fine. Fine."

[Since we are bound to be disgraced, it won't matter if we get disgraced more.]

He took the supreme dan bead and walked out the room with a solemn face.

When he reached the door of the Sky No. 1 Room, he said, "Lady Wan, I am here to give you the Bone Ablutionary Dan bead. Please check it out."

"Just put it outside the door. Is it really so valuable that I have to take it myself?"

Her voice was calm and distant; it was obviously a voice of anger.

The old man gritted with his teeth. He cautiously put down the jade bottle and stood up. Suddenly, he loudly asked, “Now that things have reached this point, I have one thing that I have to ask about. I am confused. Please do open my mind.”

Wan of the Clouds’s voice sounded again, “What is it?”

The other two men from the Sunlight Sect kept motioning him with their eyes, trying to stop his reckless actions. The old man didn’t take it. He said with anger on his face, “I just want to know, what on earth did we do wrong to Master Bai today? What did we do that offended the House of the Chaotic Storm. Why are you so aggressive to us?”

A sneer echoed out from inside the room.

Wan-Er coldly spoke, “We just made you spend five billion to buy something that’s worth 300 million, and you actually feel humiliated? When you tried to spend ten million to buy it, do you care about how others felt?”

The old man was stunned when he heard that. After a while, he finally understood. A full mouth of blood rushed to his lips.

He would like to die at this moment!

[All that you are doing, is only for such a reason?

For such a simple reason?]

Wan-Er coldly spoke, “Ten million is just a starting price, yet you toughly tried to buy that supreme dan bead. That is no different than robbery! That is at least thirty times less of the price! I intended to let you buy that supreme dan bead for a price that is thirty times as the reasonable one. Master Bai stopped me! Otherwise, you wouldn’t just get the supreme dan bead with five billion, it would be nine billion! Now do you understand?”

The old man shook and said while gritting his teeth, “I see. There is still one thing I don’t understand. Ling-Bao Hall and the House of the Chaotic Storm, what are your relation?”

Everybody opened their ears for the answer.

It was a rather important question. If Ling-Bao Hall was related to House of the Chaotic Storm, it should be their branch, then people would need to change their attitude to Ling-Bao Hall.

“No relation!” Master Bai’s voice sounded.

Apparently, Master Bai knew that Wan-Er appreciated Feng Zhiling. She was talking all good about Ling-Bao Hall, however, he wouldn’t allow it to go on further. The House of the Chaotic Storm would really be covering Ling-Bao Hall and Feng Zhiling.

“What I do today, is just what I want to do because I cannot bear watching you bully people like that. That is all. The auction is always a competition of money. It is never a competition of powers.”

“I took a move today, so I guess I may have drawn some troubles for Ling-Bao Hall too?” Master Bai smiled. “However, your Sunlight Sect can make your trouble with Ling-Bao Hall after this. You will do, won’t you? Don’t worry, I won’t lay my hand in it.”

There was a sense of horror in his voice.

“We dare not.” The old man’s face turned dark. He stepped back with his head low.

[Make trouble to Ling-Bao Hall after this?

Since Master Bai said so, who dares to? Making trouble for Ling-Bao Hall means messing up with Master Bai! It is, after all, Master Bai’s words suggesting people to do it.

Can Master Bai stand aside?

Can he?

What did he say... Won’t lay his hand in it? Are you lying to kids?

If I believe it, I will die without knowing what for!

He doesn't need to lay his own hand. He can just talk, or even just make a hint by his eyes, and countless people would love to do things for him!

Are we fools to you?!]

The old man's back looked desolate and humiliated when he walked back to their room!

He was full of hatred, yet he couldn't show it. People all felt his anger and sorrow.

However, he couldn't do anything to the House of the Chaotic Storm. Against such a giant force, he could only bear it.

He couldn't even say another word.

Even simple words like "goodbye", he couldn't bear to say it!

The two great sects, Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect, both had thousands of years history. However, different people took charge of them during the past. The legend of Mater Bai from House of the Chaotic Storm lasted for thousands of years.

Even Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens were figures in the same time.

Facing three old creatures who had lived for thousands of years, who dared to seek for revenge on them?

The Sunlight Sect had met the trouble themselves. They didn't completely fall down, but they would soon!

The Starlight Sect didn't do anything yet, but they already felt cold in their hearts now!

They didn't dare to do anything.

They didn't want to be like the Sunlight Sect.

Besides, who dared to piss the House of the Chaotic Storm again would surely end up worse than the Sunlight Sect! There was a sample in front of them; if they still did it wrong, wasn't it a worse accusation?

Because of that, the men from the Starlight Sect just cowardly sat there. They didn't even dare to let out a fart.

At this moment, a voice casually sounded over, "The great Sunlight Sect is indeed great! It truly follows its good fame. My eyes are opened today!"

The crowd all looked to where the voice came.

It was an accomplishment in normal days, yet it became so mean

at this very moment!

The men from the Sunlight Sect looked over. [We don't dare to mess with Master Bai, Wan of the Clouds, and those from the House of the Chaotic Storm, but who else dares to piss us off now? Even if he is from the Starlight Sect, we will certainly kill him!]

They only found out that the voice belonged to Feng Monarch of the Ling-Bao Hall. He was staring back at them with cold eyes while his hands were crossed in front of his chest. In his eyes, there was only disdain.

With his look, Feng Monarch was twisting the knife inside Sunlight Sect!

...

Chapter 303: We Need to Keep Low-Profile!

“Feng Zhiling, you better stop the insult!” Another person from the Sunlight Sect swore with fierce eyes. “Strutting in borrowed plumes, who do you think you are?”

Ye Xiao twitched his lips and blandly said, “I am nothing important. However, I have never used my power to bully others. I never think about taking advantages in such a vile way.”

That man from the Sunlight Sect said with anger, “What advantage did we take today? You are now twisting the knife on us. How can you call yourself noble?”

Ye Xiao laughed. “Noble? So now the Sunlight Sect tries to be noble? When you tried to bully Ling-Bao Hall earlier, did you do it in a noble way? I did not find anything noble to be honest! Oh, perhaps now that you can’t deal with the House of the Chaotic Storm, you will start to do things in a noble way, and you want everybody to take it with you?”

He coldly continued, “Do your Sunlight Sect really know what a noble way is?”

That talk made everybody in the place feel good!

In recent years, the House of the Chaotic Storm had been quiet, hidden somewhere. The Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect controlled the world. It was really whoever disobeyed them would die, while those who obeyed them would rise.

What was a noble way?

The words that were always in the Sunlight Sect's mouth was, "absolute power is the absolute rule"!

At this moment, the Sunlight Sect went into the same problem themselves!

They actually tried to use nobility as their fig leaf, yet the fig leaf was taken down without mercy.

How could that not be a delightful thing?

Under the angry watch of the men from the Sunlight Sect, Ye Xiao casually spoke, "Absolute power is the absolute rule!"

It was exactly the motto of the Sunlight Sect!

Now that it came out from Ye Xiao's mouth, those men from the Sunlight Sect were all furious like their organs were going to break apart!

"Wah!"

That old man spat out blood again. His face became yellow like gold paper. He shouted in a deep voice, "Let's go!"

He couldn't stay here anymore.

Ling-Bao Hall was like a doomed place to the Sunlight Sect!

The three of them stood up and prepared to walk out.

At this moment, from the Sky No. 1 Room, Master Bai's voice sounded, "Oh, I am so careless. I dropped the dan bead... Quickly, look for it. Can you find it?"

Wan of the Clouds said, "Oh no. I can't find it. Where did it go?"

Master Bai said, "Oh no. What should we do. It's worth five billion. Should we make compensation of five billion to the Sunlight Sect?"

His voice sounded sad, like he really didn't want to spend the money. "That is such a huge money. How can we afford it?"

Everybody was speaking inside their hearts, [To hell will I believe you dropped the dan bead... I won't believe you actually cannot find a dan bead in such a small room...

That is a lousy excuse.

It is simply an excuse!]

Even though everybody knew it was an excuse, nobody dared to stand up and say something. They all felt happy about it.

Why would they say anything to stop it?

They wished Master Bai would kill all the men from the Sunlight Sect...

That would be great for them.

It was like Wan of the Clouds answering people's wishes. She said, "Never mind it, Master. It is just a small dan bead. People in the Sunlight Sect wouldn't know what it looks like anyway. Let's just make one with some mud. I will make sure they swallow it. That will make no evidence of our fault!"

Master Bai seemed to be hesitant. "That... That doesn't seem right."

Wan of the Clouds said, "They interrupted your good mood. You finally have a chance to come out and take a rest, yet they dared to ruin it. If you are not so generous and kind, they are all going to die. In this world, it only takes you one word to get the Sunlight Sect wiped out. As easy as blowing your mouth. They wouldn't have any opportunity to survive, would they? You lost their dan bead. That should be their pleasure..."

Master Bai said, "You girl. I said that doesn't seem right..."

because it will make my hands dirty. Wan-Er, you told me to make a mud bead... I cannot bear the dirt.”

People in the crowd felt like they would spit out blood.

[You cannot bear that? Imagine what the Sunlight Sect would have to bear?

Wan of the Clouds is a figure that has shocked the entire Land of Han-Yang for thousands of years. How could she come up with such an idea? It really ruins the great image of her in our minds!]

Wan-Er said, “You’re making a mistake, master. There will be no mud on you. I am talking about picking some mud on the ground. I will make the mud bead myself and give it to you. Don’t worry. Besides, the men from the Sunlight Sect may not be able to tell the mud bead from dan beads... It really is perfect to give them the mud bead.”

People in the crowd all rolled up their eyes. [The maid and the master, you two treated the Sunlight Sect as a group of fools. How could they not tell the mud bead from dan bead... They are a great sect that has a thousand years of history after all]

Master Bai nodded in agreement. “That makes sense. However, we need to keep low-profile. We cannot be too obvious, since it will expose my identity. You should go talk to them yourself...”

“Yes, master.” Wan-Er tried hard not to laugh.

Everybody was speechless in the room.

[You have stirred the whole world around and badly disgraced the Sunlight Sect. You are high-profile to the sky, yet you actually talked about ‘keep a low-profile’ thing. Who do you think you can tell such a lie to...]

The three men had walked to the door, yet when they heard the talk from the Sky No. 1 Room, they were all furious. They suddenly lost their sights and nearly passed out.

The old man looked back as his lips trembled. He stared at the Sky No. 1 Room with fierce eyes, as if wanting to say something.

The other two covered his mouth and stopped him. They dragged him out in a tough way.

[What could you say at the moment? One more word, and you may just get killed right away. It is not only about our lives. It is also about the whole Sunlight Sect’s future.]

In the Sky No. 1 Room, Master Bai said, “That old man turned around. He seemed very angry... Wan-Er, what do you think?”

Wan of the Clouds said, “How about... I catch up with them and ask him? I will ask him if he feels right about all this?”

Master Bai said, “Forget it. We are decent people. We don’t need to do that to such an ignorant person. Let them go. Hmmm. If the Sunlight Sect is really mad at me, maybe their life will become more interesting.”

Wan-Er’s hand covered her smiling mouth. “That’s right. If they really dare to be mad at us, their life will be more prosperous and flourishing...”

Master Bai loudly laughed.

...

Chapter 304: In a Way Like Thunderbolt!

The crowd held their breath. They just quietly listened to her.

However, they couldn't but complain in their minds about it.

Wan-Er just said "their life will be more prosperous and flourishing" in a very weird tone.

It brought thoughts to people. [How is it prosperous? Hmm. Prosperous like covered by blood and surrounded by fire... Flourishing... Is it flourishing because of the fire, or because of the souls that came out from their dead bodies?]

The Sunlight Sect was gone.

Only Starlight Sect stayed as one of the great sects.

Li Wanchun, the leader of the Sunlight Sect, didn't dare to say a word nor make a single sound. He remained timid.

When he first saw Wan of the Clouds bullying the Sunlight Sect, he felt so good.

He really felt good about it!

He saw his opponent being humiliated by others in front of him, so he felt like losing lots of weight. He felt so happy and excited, so

much that he wished that he was the one humiliating the Sunlight Sect!

However, as things went on, it was getting more and more aggressive and out of control. When Master Bai showed up, Li Wanchun's happiness had instantly vanished. There was only sweat on his forehead and fear in his mind.

Sunlight Sect was not the only sect that bullied Ling-Bao Hall.

There was the Starlight Sect too.

The Starlight Sect discussed about it earlier. [Ling-Bao Hall is only a commercial organization. They have money. Well, even if we do bully them, so what? They better be wealthier, because we can make more benefits from them!]

Now they knew that Ling-Bao Hall was tough as a super giant iron board!

It was even a burning iron board.

Their backer was “a guy never gets married”—it is hard and tough!

Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect just kicked on it.

It was such a bad luck.

The men from the Sunlight Sect were insulted, but now they were gone. They would be fine at least for now.

Master Bai's next target should be the one that was left.

[Who is the target?

It is... me?!]

Li Wanchun's forehead was covered by sweat. He was so scared.

He kept praying inside his mind, [I didn't do anything indeed. I just tried to scare them a bit. I didn't want to make them feel despaired. I never bid today. Master Bai, please let go of me... You have vented your anger. You have punished them as a warning to the rest of us...

I will behave myself, I promise.

I will be the one who is warned...]

However, things were never going as one wished...

Master Bai spoke in a bitter voice, "It seems the two great sects have both come today. Now that Sunlight Sect is gone, which is the other one? Do you know that, Wan-Er?"

Here it was.

At this moment, Li Wanchun's tear was going down!

[I cannot escape it after all.]

Master Bai's words meant a beginning of another issue now.

If Wan of the Clouds answered him, Li Wanchun would lose the chance to hold initiative.

So he hurriedly said, "Li Wanchun from the Starlight Sect. I am most pleased to see you today, Master Bai."

Master Bai answered with an "oh". He said, "It is the Starlight Sect... No wonder they are so self-assured."

Li Wanchun was sweating.

With his sweat dropping on the floor, he bitterly smiled and said, "Master Bai, you are making fun of me. In front of you, who dares to be self-assured..."

Master sounded satisfied; he said, "That is good. I like those who are not self-assured in front of me. I reckon you must be an honest man. Alright, come here to me. You have come here today, so I cannot let you return with nothing. I have a dan bead here. Pay me

five billion for it. With this dan bead, it should be enough for you to make a good report when you are back.”

Li Changchun kept his eyes opened. His eyeballs nearly popped out from his eyes.

[What did I hear?

Oh my freaking god!

Master Bai wants me to spend five billion for his dan bead?

Sunlight Sect spent five billion and only got a chest full of anger. What would I get if I spend this five billion?]

Li Wanchun smiled and said, “Ok.”

He couldn't say no. He didn't dare to. If he said so, he might end up worse than Sunlight Sect!

Under the watch of the public, Li Wanchun took out all his money and reached his hands to the two men next to him. He collected all the money he could. The three of them should be very rich in this world, yet they still couldn't make it five billion. He had to borrow one billion from another sect to make it right. At last, he took all he got to the Sky No. 1 Room.

He took the money to them, yet he still needed to stand and wait

outside for a while. Finally, somebody came out and took the money. After a while, they took a... wax bead out to him.

“Hmmm? Where is the Bone Ablutionary Dan bead?” He was stunned. He couldn’t help asking.

[There should only one dan bead in Master Bai’s, right?

It should be the dan bead that he ‘robbed’ from Sunlight Sect, right?]

At first, he felt alright about it; if Master Bai forced him to buy it, he would have that supreme dan bead after all, although it was a bit expensive. When he was back to the sect, he could easily find some excuse for what happened.

He could say, “What could I do? Master Bai already did that. Could you question him? Or refuse him?”

“Of course you would do the same thing like I did! At least I have a supreme dan bead now!”

Things were different now. Now... there was no supreme dan bead.

There was only a wax bead!

There was no dan bead at all.

Wan of the Clouds didn't show up. She answered from inside, "What Bone Ablutionary Dan bead? When did my master say he would give you the Bone Ablutionary Dan bead?"

Li Wanchun couldn't find a word to say.

He wanted to be angry, but he couldn't dare to.

If he didn't say anything, he would have to spend five billion for a wax bead...

What could he do?

He really couldn't explain it over!

Li Wanchun stood there with a blank head as his face turned green and pale. He was in hesitation. Wan of the Clouds spoke again, "No return of goods. Master Li, if you really don't feel satisfied, come in and have a cup of tea that represents my apology?"

Li Wanchun stood for a while and took a long breath out. "Fine. I will take it."

He turned around and left.

Wan-Er spoke in anger, "Stop there! Li Wanchun, you came

without asking, now you are going to leave without asking. What do you think our place is? Is it somewhere you can feel free to come and go? I talked to you in a polite way, yet you are disgracing me!”

With the words, a stream of cold light flew out from the Sky No. 1 Room like a thunder.

Li Wanchun loudly screeched.

His entire right arm was chopped down from the shoulder and fell to the floor!

...

Chapter 305: It Cooled Down!

The cold light chopped his arm down. That wasn't the most surprising thing; even more surprising was that the wound was so flat, and there was no blood coming out of it.

"You..." Li Wanchun covered the wound with his hand. With his eyes wide opened, he shouted as he stared at Sky No. 1 Room.

"You what! You should thank Lady Wan for not taking your life. Off you go, hurry up! What are you waiting for? You want to taste one cup of my apologizing tea?" Outside the room, a man in black spoke to Li Wanchun, smiling with his hand on his sword.

Li Wanchun took in deep breaths. He did it for several times, and then he nodded. "House of the Chaotic Storms is indeed the world's No. 1! I will remember it. I will see you when I see you. I believe I will have a chance to show my appreciation to you for sparing my life!"

Wan-Er humphed and blandly said, "I didn't want to keep you alive. However, it is a good day that my master has a good mood today. He just came out for relaxation. I won't let your blood ruin this mood... Now, if you don't want to go, I can keep your head here."

Li Wanchun held his arm with his other hand and left with hatred shown on his face.

At this moment, a piece of white cloth slowly fell down to the

floor.

The cold light that chopped down his arm was actually a piece of a robe band!

Before Li Wanchun got out the door, he turned around and looked at Ye Xiao. “Feng Monarch, nice scheme! I will remember you! There are lots of days to come, and you and me shall meet again.”

Ye Xiao was surprised. He lifted his eyebrows and said, “How weird. You were injured by the House of the Chaotic Storm, yet you sucked it in because you cannot afford messing with them. That is reasonable. We will understand you. Everybody will. However, now you make trouble for me. What do you want? To be honest, that is so difficult to understand!”

Li Wanchun bitterly smiled as he nodded. “You understand it. I do too. Let’s just see what will happen!”

And then he walked out the door and left.

Ye Xiao was confused. His voice sounded after Li Wanchun left, “What do you mean I understand and you do too. I don’t. What should I understand? Do you even know what you are talking about? What are you? Why talk so weirdly and confusingly!”

The two superior cultivators of the Starlight Sect who were after Li Wanchun heard it all, yet they didn’t answer. They knew

whatever they answered him with would only bring them disgrace. They just fiercely glanced at Ye Xiao before they left.

Ye Xiao was confused. “What is the problem with you three. Why are you being so weird... You got bullied, so you are angry. That is fine. Why do you blame the Ling-Bao Hall... That is really some unexpected trouble! There are actually such brutal people in the world...”

Suddenly, the crowd burst into talks, “Yes. That is right. They are so brutal.”

In fact, everybody was scolding in their minds, [How would the Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect end up so bad if you don’t have Master Bai backing you up? Now you pretend like you are so damn innocent. Who do you want to show all this to?

Isn’t it like a whore saying she’s chaste?

Even more annoying is that you actually want us to yell for you!

For gods sake, we do love yelling for you though. You have such a powerful support there after all!]

Wenren Chuchu and Bing Xinyue, who were sitting in a corner, both tried so hard not to laugh out loud. They covered their mouths with their hands, and they nearly felt pain on their belly because of laughing.

They came here for the supreme dan beads indeed. However, their real purpose was... In case Feng Zhiling failed to deal with the two great sects, Bing Xinyue would help him!

She would make sure the threat from the two great sects would be gone.

Starlight Sect and Sunlight Sect were the most powerful sects in the Land of Han-Yang, but they were nothing to Bing Xinyue. Compared to Master Bai, it might be easier for her to destroy them!

However, there were two main forces in the Qing-Yun Realm behind these two sects. They were the Saint Starlight Sect and Saint Sunlight Sect!

Bing Xinyue couldn't do anything to those two sects, but Master Bai was different. He wouldn't be worried that the Saint Starlight Sect and Saint Sunlight Sect would know about it. No matter whether they were sects from the Land of Han-Yang or from the Qing-Yun Realm, they were no different for Master Bai!

When the auction was started, Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu gave up on the supreme dan beads. The reason was simple. They didn't have the money!

They came in a hurry, so they didn't bring much money this time. When they heard the lowest price of the supreme dan beads, they just quit!

Thus, they stayed here for another purpose: the real one.

When they were preparing to do something, they didn't even have time to say a word; Feng Zhiling had actually taken good care of the whole situation in a brilliant way.

Things were all done, yet he was still playing innocent and trying to get some moral support. Well, apparently, nobody really believed him!

The two sects that were stirring up troubles had left.

The auction was halfway done.

The hall had cooled down, and there was barely anybody bidding.

Who dared to bid while Master Bai was sitting up there?

[What if when I call a price, Master Bai says, 'Hey, I call it one billion, and you have to go on bidding! No way you stop!']...

Will that not drive me to death?

The two great sects were rich. They surely don't want to pay the five billion, but they have much more than that to spend!

We do not! Not to mention five billion, one billion would break me down!

Even if I do have that money, the problem is, no matter how much I have, it could all become Master Bai's! And the item will never be in my hand at the end.

We all see this fact. The two great sects, one of them spent five billion for a full chest of anger, while the other spent five billion for just a wax bead...

That is five billion!

It is such a tremendous number.

Let's just keep calm. Don't stick our heads up too high. No matter how good the supreme dan bead is, it means nothing if it isn't in your hands!]

People all have the same thoughts!

Thus, the auction was cooled down.

It was only one problem though. There was another. Nobody dared to leave. [If Master Bai didn't tell anyone to leave, who dares to leave?]

Some of them didn't even dare to go to the toilet. They were

nearly going to piss on themselves now, but they were still sitting quietly there.

[Well, it is better peeing myself than killing myself, right?]

None of them were more powerful than the two great sects after all.

Even the two great sects got insulted like that, then what would they get?

If any of them dared to say, “I am going to the toilet. I need to pee.”

If Master Bai said, “How dare you say the word toilet in front of me? You want to pee? Fine. I will get you killed. Now you don’t need to pee anymore...”

Wouldn’t it be a tragedy?

...

Chapter 306: Is It Money?

At this moment, Wan-Er's voice sounded from the Sky No. 1 Room, "My master came out for nothing. He just want to enjoy some leisure time. He wouldn't want to buy anything. We did that because the two great sects were stepping too over the top... We couldn't bear it, so we took actions."

Speaking of that, Wan-Er laughed and said, "You may not know that Master hasn't arranged something himself for quite a long time. Now he personally arranged such thing for those two sects, they really are lucky."

The crowd burst into laughter.

"Hahahaha..."

"... Hahaha, that is right! Lady Wan-Er made a good point! Great talk!"

Lady Wan of the Clouds finally made a joke, who could not laugh after it?

Who dared not to?

Many of them nearly destroyed their throats to show that they really respected it.

“... So... The auction should go on as it should be. Whatever you want to buy, you just bid for it. The bad guys are gone now. Nobody will mess the fair rule now. You shouldn't have any apprehension now, should you?”

Wan-Er said, “My master and I, we are only here to observe how things are going on. We were and we are now. Please do not worry about it. We may just leave later...”

The crowd burst into cheers. Fawning words kept coming out from their mouths.

“The great Master Bai!”

“Thank you, Lady Wan-Er! Thank you, Master Bai! You made us a peaceful and warm auction!”

“Master Bai and Lady Wan-Er really worked so hard for us. I am moved and I would weep because of it...”

“That is right. It may be a really shitty situation now if Master Bai and Lady Wan-Er didn't help us.”

“Right. The great sects are acting too aggressive. What Lady Wan-Er did was simply justice. It is so fleeting. When I am back home, I will hold a feast for the kindness you showed us!”

“Right! I will do it too!”

...

Ye Xiao rolled up his eyes. He looked at these people and felt like ten thousand of alpacas were running fast through his heart.

[What a bunch of bloody fence-straddler!

You were scared the sh*t out just now, and now that you have a chance to be a yes man, you all work so hard on it. Look how sharp your mouths are. I cannot believe these men are in the top positions of the Land of Han-Yang.

What is ‘Master Bai made us a peaceful and warm auction’?

I did!

What do you mean ‘hold a feast for the kindness’? And ‘I will do it too’? Bullsh*t!

You better have a good dinner to calm down your bloody scared little heart. Feast? What is it for?

Everybody goes after it!

What a bunch of useless sh*ts!]

No matter how disdainful he was about it, the auction was back on track after all.

The auction was on heat. Master Guan, Guan Wanshan, was surprised about it!

[What happened to these people?

I just said, ‘supreme level Bone Ablutionary Dan bead, one piece, the price is...’

Somebody actually interrupt me and shouted ‘300 million’!

And then someone followed, ‘350 million’!

Then ‘360 million’!

‘370 million’!

‘400 million’!

‘450 million’!

...]

Guan Wanshan didn’t need to say anything to arouse their interests. The price went up like a rocket. Within seconds, the

price reached 450 million.

People talked to each other about it...

Guan Wanshan was shocked, and for a while, he was dumbstruck. He said, “450 million. That is the price. Who wants to raise it? Any one higher? It is a supreme level Bone Ablutionary Dan bead. No one has ever seen it... Hmm. No one has ever seen it until now. we finally see some... Hmm. 450 million the first time... The second time... If there is no one making a higher price, this dan bead will be... Wait, what is the number?”

It happened too fast and disorderly. Even the oldest auction master, Guan Wanshan, was stunned. He didn't remember who made the last bid... That was too fast!

And it was too disordered!

In fact, all this mess was for the words, “Master Bai want to see it...”

[Maybe if I spend so much money, Master Bai would think I am clever and smart...

Then he will look after me a little?

Even if he wouldn't look after me, it would still be a great thing that... the House of the Chaotic Storms doesn't seek troubles on me...]

[Master Bai may not remember the ones who make bids, however, what if he only pay attention to those who do not bid? If I don't bid, would that make me too eye-catching though?]

No matter what strange thoughts they had, they all bid like hell.

They just wanted to make sure Master Bai enjoyed the auction!

[It would be great if Master Bai noticed me...]

This auction was bound to be the most successful auction in history!

It was record breaking for the Land of Han-Yang!

Even Wan Zhenghao was stunned. [What the hell. I know the supreme dan beads are good stuff. It is some precious treasure indeed. But... It is never this good, is it? The same items showed up several times today. It is always not a good thing to sell the same item for several times in the same auction. It will drop the price for sure. For example, the Bone Ablutionary Dan, 300 million is a top price. In the auction, it may be higher than this price. That is possible. But there are a few Bone Ablutionary Dan beads today. It should make the price lower. However...

Why is it getting higher and higher?

A dan bead that is worth 20 million taels became 100 million?

That is alright. Fine.

The highest price of the Bone Ablutionary Dan should be 480 million. 300 million is a reasonable price. But it raised to 600 million!

That... Is it an inflation now? So money isn't worth as much as I think it does now?

Maybe I am wrong about the highest price? Did we do wrong on the math?]

Wan Zhenghao felt dizzy. He felt like his head was hit by gold mountains several times. He felt dazzled in sight. Everything was like a gold mountain in his sight now!

[There are hundreds of dan beads on sale today!

Oh my god!

The lowest price of these dan beads is 60 million!

The highest is 2.5 billion. Half of them was worth about 700 million...

Is it money I am talking about now?

Is it?]

...

Chapter 307: The Bold Feng Monarch

Wan Zhenghao grabbed his own leg so hard. He felt the pain, yet he was so happy that he almost shed tear.

He just wanted to shout out loud!

“My god! This is some really easy money! It is even easier than robbing money!”

...

“That money is really easy to make!” Bing Xinyue looked at the scene and sighed with emotion.

Money in the Land of Han-Yang didn't mean anything to her. That was true. However, the price was hitting some real enormous numbers. Time and time again, it shocked her. Eventually, she said such words that didn't really fit her personality as a super great cultivator!

Wenren Chuchu had complicated thoughts. She bit her lips with her pretty teeth and sighed. “That is right. It is truly some easy money... I even want to kill Feng Zhiling because of it...”

Bing Xinyue was stunned, but then she understood.

Ling-Bao Hall had claimed to support the Kingdom of Chen. The

profit from the auction would partly go to the Kingdom of Chen. For now, the Kingdom of Chen should get about dozens of billion taels for military use!

Most of this money would be used against the Kingdom of Lan-Feng, where Wenren Chuchu belonged!

Money in the Land of Han-Yang meant nothing to Bing Xinyue, but it meant so much to other people. It could change almost everything in the world!

For example, the war!

What is the key in winning a war? Money!

As the battle went on, the result depended on which side had more money or resources. Soldiers needed to eat after all! They needed to dress! They needed to raise their family.

Everyday, there would be a huge amount of weapons damaged. What needed to be used to fix it? Money!

What did the horses eat? What did they drink?

It was all about one thing: Money!

The Kingdom of Chen had such a money-making machine—the Ling-Bao Hall. Wenren Chuchu could be sure about one thing.

After this auction, Kingdom of Chen would be able to hold on in the war for ten years easily.

Kingdom of Chen could even make tax exemption during the war so that the people would support them!

Kingdom of Lan-Feng was different though.

They had spent over half of their treasury when they were seeking allies. Now, they didn't stop the consumption yet. They would never be able to hold it for so long!

“Roughly, I reckon that the money they made in this auction would be at least 120 billion! The Kingdom of Chen will take 60 billion as Ling-Bao Hall had made their declaration! 60 billion! That is a huge number that can break down the minds of ninety-nine percent of the world's population...”

Wenren Chuchu bitterly closed her eyes. “Now, the money is no more money in my mind. It becomes knives, swords, spears... They are falling down on our people's heads...”

Bing Xinyue sighed heavily.

Wenren Chuchu was her disciple, and she was also the princess of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng. That was a special situation...

...

Like Lady Wan-Er said, she and Master Bai were gone secretly before anybody knew.

They didn't make any sound of it!

The auction had achieved an enormous success!

It created a new legend in the Land of Han-Yang—a legend that was almost impossible to be exceeded!

The money they made on this auction was twice as much as Ye Xiao expected!

When Wan Zhenghao came to him and told him the good news in a frisky way, Ye Xiao was shocked.

He even ignored the disgusting feeling for the hundred kilograms of frisky fat...

“145.08 billion...”

When he heard the number, he was stunned.

[Since when did ‘eighty million’ become the odd of a number?

That... Even in the myth, it will never happen, will it?]

Well, the reality told him yes. It truly was so shocking, so astonishing!

“Oh my god...”

Ye Xiao took a long breath out.

“In the history, I, Wan Zhenghao, swear, no other auction has made more money than we do this time! And there will never be! This auction is a unique historical event!”

Wan Zhenghao was so excited that the fat on his body started to shake.

“I agree that there has never been any other auction beyond this... Well in the future...” Ye Xiao said in a way like laughing. He suddenly thought of something. “By the way, did Master Bai leave the five billion from the Sunlight Sect to us?”

Wan Zhenghao was surprised. “No.”

Ye Xiao was furious, “Bastard! He took our money, five billion! That is too much! I will remember this. Bastard, wait and see! How dare you took my money!”

Wan Zhenghao was stunned.

[How could that five billion... be ours?

What are you talking about...

That aside, the reason why our auction could be so successful is one hundred percent Master Bai's credit. He stood for us, so the auction became such a hot event!

If not, it would be very lucky to have half of the money we make now!

In fact, Master Bai is generous not to take the money we make in the auction...

You actually want the money in his hands?

You really are full of imagination!

That is truly too...]

Wan Zhenghao breathed the cold air. He didn't dare to say anything all of a sudden.

[I have to say, Feng Monarch really have balls...

That is bigger than my fat body!]

The auction was finished. Ye Xiao left with lots of money after giving some instructions.

People who had attended this auction had never thought that the price would be so crazily high. Most of them didn't bring enough money.

However, there was always a way for money.

The most direct way was to pledge something to make up their short for money. Ordinary things wouldn't work for Ling-Bao Hall—like property, shops, houses, beauties and hot guys. They were not acceptable. However... Special medical materials, treasures, unique metal materials... These were good. Ling-Bao Hall even agreed to give money for them.

Surely, as it was a pledge, so it wouldn't be a fair price at the first place. Whoever made a pledge should understand it. Ling-Bao Hall was doing it in a kind way after all. They offered over ninety percent of the fair price. It was certainly a generous move of Ling-Bao Hall, a salesroom.

The guests who made pledges were happy, Ling-Bao Hall was happy. Ling-Bao Hall had made a great profit on this business too. The profit rate was about or maybe less than ten percent, but the number was huge, wasn't it?

...

Chapter 308: Harvest!

A million made 100 thousand. It was not a small profit, yet it wasn't a big one. Ten billion made one billion. That was huge. The total price of this auction was 145 billion and 80 million. The circulating money in the whole Land of Han-Yang would be less than half of this amount.

Thus, the total money Ling-Bao Hall made from the pledge business was huge!

In fact, people who attended this auction, especially those from the noble clans, they knew it was an auction for some extremely precious dan beads, yet they still didn't bring much money, because they thought they didn't have chance to snatch the dan beads. Everybody knew that the great sects would lay their hands on this auction. That was why everybody just wanted to see if there was good luck for them to get something. They would buy something nice if they had the chance, but they would just quit if they didn't. They didn't bring enough money, but they brought a lot. If they wanted to buy a Bone Ablutionary Dan bead for 300 million, they could afford it easily.

However, things changed too fast. The auction was an unexpectedly hot event. The Sunlight Sect made some trouble during the auction and got kicked out. Two great sects were both bullied and extorted by Master Bai. They were both gone at the end.

The House of the Chaotic Storms left quietly after the two great sects left. The opportunity suddenly came to people in the crowd.

That was some chance to acquire two, three, four, five dan beads... As long as there was money, there was dan beads.

The more the better!

The noble clans went crazy facing such an opportunity.

They didn't bring enough money, so what should they do?

They just made bids. They would rather be in debt to win more dan beads. They sent their men back to their family for more money. They paid, they got what they won. It was just a normal thing in the salesroom.

However, this time the number was quite huge. The trading business was the most important thing to the noble clans. They would never take their money out recklessly. Since they couldn't get enough money, they had to make a pledge.

They took all the valuable materials they had collected for all the years to the Chen-Xing City. Ling-Bao Hall would make an evaluation.

The Long Clan was the greediest one. They got ten supreme dan beads, and it totally costed them over 3 billion. How could they possibly get so much money in such a short time? They nearly cleared the entire stock of their clan, and their clan had spent thousands of years to collect all those treasures.

Anyways, they still felt lucky. They thought they had taken a great advantage this time...

All in all...

The number was about 145 billion. In fact, they had made at least 160 billion this time. They only got less than 80 billion in cash, and the rest were all different kinds of items. In other words, they made 15 billion more than what they appeared to earn!

They didn't need to share it to the Kingdom of Chen.

The profit was about 72 billion this time.

As they promised, they would have to pay 14 billion as tax and sixty percent of the profit as donation to the kingdom. That made it 42 billion. Besides, they needed to give ten percent to the military. That was about 7 billion.

Thus, suddenly there was a 63 billion deduction.

According to that, Ling-Bao Hall had only earned over 10 billion.

Wan Zhenghao was satisfied already.

“We have to share the wealth. If we keep it to ourselves, it will choke us to death.” That was how he put it.

What he said made Feng Monarch lost in thoughts for a while. Feng Monarch found it quite reasonable.

However, it was only reasonable.

Those materials and treasures that was worth about 80 billion all went into his own pocket!

He wasn't unobtrusive at all.

In fact, what he could take away from Ling-Bao Hall now was only worth 10 billion. He didn't even check it. He just put them all into the Boundless Space.

There was a big part of it Ye Xiao hadn't seen before; he had just heard some of them. Now that he got so many things that he had never seen before, he didn't feel much excited anymore. He didn't have time to check them one by one, so he just put them into the Space and let the Nine Spaces do the sorting. He would like to leave them be for a while!

Even if he wouldn't get the other treasures that was worth about 60 billion, Ye Xiao was already fine.

It wasn't easy to provide timely help, but it was quite easy to add brilliance to his present splendor.

“All the items that the noble clans promised should be brought back to the Chen-Xing City in three days!” Wan Zhenghao said.

Ye Xiao really wanted to laugh out loud to vent the pleasure in his heart.

That felt so good.

There were so many valuable things for him.

Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu saw Feng Monarch leave, yet surprisingly, they didn't do anything.

Wenren Chuchu was preoccupied by emotions, and Bing Xinyue had a complex expression in her eyes too.

They were both troubled by the unclear situation. They couldn't see which side was their enemy, and which was their ally.

“Maser, when you get better, I will need to go back to Kingdom of Lan-Feng. We have to fight against Kingdom of Chen. I am the princess after all. This title brings me honor and power that normal people cannot have. The kingdom is in a bad time, so I have to fulfill my responsibility!” Wenren Chuchu looked at the way Ye Xiao left. She was calm, and she showed a pair of solemn eyes. She was determined. [He insists his duty to protect, I have my own duty!]

Bing Xinyue sighed and said, “Fine. When I am better, I will

return to the Qing-Yun Realm. There is something I have to sort out. We need to start raising the Regeneration Lotus as soon as possible. I have to inform our sect and see if it is possible to get us more resources to help Feng Monarch make more Jade Lotus... It is something the future of the entire Misty Cloud Palace relies on... Chuchu, he cannot make any mistake on this.”

Wenren Chuchu’s eyes turned a bit dim. She said, “Yes. I understand.”

She lowered her head.

They couldn’t lose Feng Zhiling, however, Feng Zhiling stood for the Kingdom of Chen. The Kingdom of Chen was enemy to the Kingdom of Lan-Feng for sure. There was way to change the fact.

She was the princess of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng.

More importantly, she seemed to like this guy, Feng Zhiling.

If it was about the future of her kingdom, she could just abandon her feeling for him. She wouldn’t feel bad even if she needed to suffer the pain in heart for the rest of her life. However, Feng Zhiling was the last chance the Misty Cloud Palace got now.

The Misty Cloud Palace was the sect she belonged to.

She thought about that, and the complexity in it made her feel headache.

...

Chapter 309: Come Across

[Oh my god. How do I deal with such complicated relations in this?] Wenren Chuchu sighed.

The expression in Bing Xinyue's eyes was complicated and unstable. It seemed her face turned red.

If Wenren Chuchu wasn't troubled in mind at the moment, as a smart girl, she would definitely find out the unusualness of her master. However, she couldn't care about that right now. She just didn't have time for such trifle.

They both were lost in their complicated thoughts.

They couldn't get out from it.

Ye Xiao left with a huge amount of money. He didn't stop, and he just went straight out of the city gate. He went to the mysterious mountain that has "fallen from the sky". He just disappeared in it.

Nearly at the same time, a young man in white clothes entered the city while casually riding a pretty horse.

The soldiers at the entrance bowed. "Lord Ye."

Ye Xiao answered with a smile, "You have worked hard, brothers."

The soldiers had a chat with him and saw him leave to the city on his big horse. One of the soldiers was confused as he rubbed his head. “Oh... I don’t think I have ever seen Lord Ye leaving the city the whole day. How come he suddenly returned from outside? Am I remember it wrong? Did I make any mistake?”

Another soldier disdainfully said, “You pig head. How could you remember anything right? You cannot even complete a good sentence. There are so many people coming in and out the city these several days. It should be over a hundred thousand people. How could you remember them all? Who do you think you are?”

That soldier was still confused. “No, no, no. There are so many people passing here. I cannot remember all of them, but Lord Ye is somebody I will especially pay attention to. I shouldn’t forget it. I must have mistaken him for somebody else.”

“Maybe Lord Ye left yesterday? Besides, you should spend more time thinking about whether we have any spy among us. Why are you thinking about the young lord in the General’s family... You must be too leisure!” the other soldier shouted at him with angry eyes.

“Yes, I will.” The soldier promised he wouldn’t think about it anymore. In fact, it wasn’t something serious. That was just a casual talk between soldiers.

Ye Xiao was acting high profile riding his big horse across the streets. He was acting exactly like one of the “three lords in town”.

Actually, he looked most likely the head of them.

He had just reached the door of the House of Ye, and a group of people riding the horses came over to him.

Looking at it, he saw the Crown Prince, the second prince, the third prince, and the youngest prince, Chen Zhi. There were also Zuo Wuji and Lan Langlang... It was a huge group of people coming over to him.

They saw Ye Xiao on the horse, and their eyes simultaneously lit up.

“Xiao Xiao! What are you up for recently? Why do you have to leave town at this time... What a shame. You missed a big hot event,” Lan Langlang rushed over first, shouting.

Ye Xiao was nodding to everybody. Lan Langlang held him in arms—he must be too excited. He lifted Ye Xiao up entirely.

Lan Langlang was very excited; he had six hundred dan beads in hand.

That was something priceless!

Even though they were six hundred good trauma medicine, it might not be that useful for those people from the martial forces. They were only for traumas, and that was why they meant little to them.

However, for people who were fighting in the war, it was absolutely a marvelous medicine. It must be more useful than other supreme dan beads. No matter how good a supreme dan bead was, it healed one person. One Gold Healing Dan bead could save three soldiers' lives. It worked exactly on soldiers' needs. That was an obvious advantage.

Lan Langlang didn't dare to go home alone, worried that he might get robbed on the way. The dan beads were the lives of two thousand soldiers in the army, so after thinking about, he decided to go after the group of people who followed the Crown Prince. [Isn't it a group of guards for me?]

That was why he stuck with them forcibly and left with them. He asked them to send him back to the House of General Lan. Zuo Wuji had done a lot of talks for it. He put it "to save the lives of the soldiers is to save the kingdom". That left the princes no choice but to guard Lan Langlang home first.

They never expected they would come across Ye Xiao though.

The three princes felt uncomfortable.

[I was thinking there was one missing among the 'three lords in town'. Now they are all here...]

"I would not go and get involved with that kind of hot event. What if somebody hit me with a Melting Bone Palm? That would be a real trouble for me. Last time, it caused a huge loss to my

father's cultivation. One more time, it would kill my father and I for sure!" Ye Xiao smiled blandly and got Lan Langlang away from him.

When he said that, nobody cared much about that attack, except the Crown Prince. The others were not involved in that issue after all. Ye Xiao was the victim that time; he could have died. It was normal that he would complain about it.

The Crown Prince changed his expression on his face.

Behind the Crown Prince, Guan Zhengwen, who was wearing a robe with big sleeves, felt stunned. His eyes were full of fear as he glanced at this young man in white clothes. He felt helpless somehow.

"Lord Ye is a blessed man. You will always get through the bad lucks. I guess you should have perfectly recovered now, right?" the Crown Prince asked with a warm smile, "I still remember when I went to see you in your house, you were in a comma. Look at you now. You are shining. You are like a different person now. Good man truly will always be blessed."

"I should thank you for your kindness," Ye Xiao said smilingly, "thanks to you, really, I could get through that. Heh, heh. If you didn't make that effort of trying to save me, I might not have the chance to see my father again. Then I might very likely lose my life. Now that I am healing so fast, I must thank you. When we have time, I will hold a feast to show my appreciation."

The Crown Prince answered with a smile.

The conversation between them seemed to be reasonable. The Crown Prince was like a generous and caring good prince. Ye Xiao was like a grateful man who couldn't find a way to show his appreciation.

However, the Crown Prince felt that there was something different hidden in Ye Xiao's words.

[Is it my illusion? Is it not? It possibly is.]

He felt something wrong about it, yet he still forced himself to think about the bright side. He would rather believe it was an illusion. If it was not, and what he had done was unmasked, the result would be an overpowering burden to him!

...

Chapter 310: You Still Have Lots Of Time

In fact, it was not only the Crown Prince who noticed something—even Guan Zhengwen did. He kept his eyes on Ye Xiao with gentleness, paying attention to every word, every gesture, and every facial expression of Ye Xiao.

However, he didn't have the same thought like the Crown Prince did. He was judging Ye Xiao's physical condition. [He was hit by my Melting Bone Palm, so he shouldn't have recovered so quickly!]

Ye Nantian had the capability to cure the wound of Melting Bone Palm strike. Surely, he had the capability to boost the recovery process of Ye Xiao. Besides, there were so many valuable medical materials from the royal house. It was reasonable that he could recover so quickly...

Like the Crown Prince, Guan Zhengwen chose to believe something he would feel better. He rather believed that Ye Xiao truly had no idea about what happened at all!

“Now that you are well, we can hang out together again. Hmm.. Not today though. I have to take these dan beads back. It concerns many people's lives. I will go to you someday with Zuo. Let's go to my shop. It is a newly launched business. Surely, it won't be as good as Ling-Bao Hall. However, I am confident that it will surpass Ling-Bao Hall someday.” Lan Langlang was obviously delighted. He was so excited that he jumped while walking.

Since Lan Langlang made a beginning, the rest of the group went

to greet Ye Xiao too. They were acting so humble. They acted like Ye Xiao was the prince, while they were his underlings.

Zuo Wuji was the last. He didn't go to Ye Xiao at first, because the youngest prince, Chen Zhi was beside him.

The youngest prince was looking up and talking to Zuo Wuji excitedly.

Zuo Wuji was apparently quite patient. He answered every question from the little prince. When Ye Xiao walked close to him, Zuo Wuji looked up into Ye Xiao's eyes.

There was inquiry in Ye Xiao's eyes.

Zuo Wuji was surprised, and then he nodded.

Ye Xiao was surprised too. Then he was lost in thoughts. Zuo Wuji looked at him without saying a word, frowning.

As Zuo Wuji was silent, Ye Xiao sighed and shrugged.

Zuo Wuji sighed and shrugged too.

They actually said nothing to each other, and then just left.

They really didn't say anything at all. They just looked at each

other and made some small gestures. Then they were done.

“Are you playing silent riddles? What is it about?” Chen Zhi was interested, so he asked.

Zuo Wuji smiled bitterly. He didn’t know what to answer.

[Silent riddles?

Maybe.

Such short silent riddles may influence you and your brothers’ future lives. It may influence everybody’s lives in this world.]

Ye Xiao didn’t say anything, but he gave Zuo Wuji a hint by eyes. [Let’s talk about it deeper sometime.]

Zuo Wuji got it.

The “three lords in town” got together unexpectedly this time. Lan Langlang has fallen into the joy and surprise. He didn’t notice anything wrong, however, Ye Xiao and Zuo Wuji noticed that they both had changed!

In fact, the three of them were all changed!

They changed a lot!

They were unbelievably changed so much.

They were still the same guys wearing the same clothes. What was it that changed then?

Lan Langlang still had a innocent heart, but now he was clearly aware of his responsibility. He knew what he could do and should do, and he knew where he should go to in the future. The future ahead of him might not be smooth, but he knew he had to focus on the presence and embrace the future!

Ye Xiao could feel that there was a sense of gentleness on Zuo Wuji. He seemed to be generous and vigorous now.

He was confident and proud!

Even though he didn't say anything, the invisible vigor of him was vividly shown!

That was real!

Ye Xiao realized something.

Zuo Wuji was close to what he wanted. Maybe he had started to fight for it now. He would become the head of the officials in court someday, and the stateliness from that was already shining on him now.

He had wisdom and he had the elegance from it. Once he gained a official position, he would erupt the energy that nobody could imagine.

The future was full of storms. Zuo Wuji had seen his end, and he knew where he would eventually belong, yet he was still moving on, like a flying moth darting into the fire!

Zuo Wuji was fully prepared. He just needed a lift.

That was Ye Xiao's thought about him.

Zuo Wuji also felt that Ye Xiao was a different person now comparing to the old days.

When he saw Ye Xiao earlier, he felt Ye Xiao was gloomy and beardless.

Now, Ye Xiao was vigorous and casual. Every movement of him, every expression on his face was so good!

Insensibly, he was emitting a feeling of "holding the world". Besides, he seemed to have a sharp attitude that he wouldn't care about anything in the world...

[Ye Xiao's future will never be just in the Land of Han-Yang.] Zuo Wuji spoke to himself, [And, he is now almost ready... I guess...]

“What’s troubling you? Brother Zuo, they have arrived.” Chen Zhi’s voice brought Zuo Wuji back from his deep thoughts. He looked up and found that they had reached the Southern General’s House.

Lan Langlang was safely home. The princes politely refused to get in and have some tea. They just left themselves.

The Crown Prince asked Chen Zhi to go with him when he was leaving. Chen Zhi didn’t want to; he wanted to hang out with Zuo Wuji. Zuo Wuji was smiling and asking for the Crown Prince’s permission. The Crown Prince was carrying a troubled mind. He tried so hard to calm himself down, but he was still troubled, so he didn’t insist.

Before he left, he bended down and talked to his little brother, “Zhi, behave yourself. Don’t get into troubles. Okay?”

He tapped on Chen Zhi’s head and waved to Zuo Wuji. At last, he rode on the horse and left.

When Zuo Wuji looked at the Crown Prince while talking to his little brother, he noticed the fear deep inside Chen Zhi’s eyes. He watched the Crown Prince get up and leave. He kept smiling.

That was the only expression on his face all along.

It looked like he was wearing a mask.

“I still have a lot of time,” Zuo Wuji murmured to himself.

And then he talked to Chen Zhi, “You too. You have lots of time too.”

Chen Zhi kept his eyes opened widely and asked, “What? Brother Zuo, what are you talking about?”

Zuo Wuji smiled.

[Is it a lot or not. Maybe it needs more time to be decided on.]

...

Chapter 311: Accident

Zuo Wuji planned a few places for Chen Zhi, but they were not simply places to have fun. While somebody was playing in these places, he would not be able to control his true feelings... It would reveal the real personality of him from deep inside his heart. It could see through one's heart.

Zuo Wuji wanted to be sure everything was good before he would get to Ye Xiao and discuss about... something.

That was something concerning the Kingdom of Chen—even the entire Land of Han-Yang!

...

When Ye Xiao left Lan Langlang and the other people, he directly went home without hesitation. He hurriedly got off the horse and entered the yard. Song Jue happened to rush out, and they nearly crashed into each other.

Ye Xiao smiled to apologize and then disappeared in the yard.

Song Jue was confused. [What is it? Why is he so hurried? Why is he [acting like there is fire on his butt?](#)]

He didn't know that Ye Xiao was truly having fire on his butt now.

The reason was that the Boundless Space was suddenly in a mess.

Every stomach had its capacity. Someone who ate would get full, and someone who ate too much would get plumped. If he ate more than too much, his belly would explode!

Ye Xiao had put all the materials that worth was 10 billion taels into the Boundless Space. It didn't actually made the Space explode. There were a lot of things being added into it. It was more like a small test to the capacity of the Space. When the materials were divided to the Nine Spaces, it took less room.

So what happened to the Space wasn't because of overloading.

However, it was certainly related to that big amount of materials. In fact, it was the Cosmic Hades causing the accident. Ye Xiao was spiritually conquered by that stone. It always brought him trouble from time to time.

It was a recidivist!

As soon as there were many things added into the Space and they happened to have the possibility to influence the Cosmic Hades, it would go mad and break the balance of the Space.

Every time when such a thing happened and the extreme cold qi filled up the Space, Ye Xiao would be mostly benefited. It boosted the process of cultivation, however, that sense of urgency that brought a threat of death to Ye Xiao always made him rather

uncomfortable.

The feeling of the death coming closer and closer was truly difficult, even though he could eventually benefit from it!

The situation caused by the Cosmic Hades was always an emergency. If it couldn't be solved soon enough, it would bring terrible consequences!

If it was delayed like half an hour, the materials and treasures in the Wood Space would be affected in a great deal!

The Wood Space concerned the qi of living. It was the very important part that couldn't be damaged...

This time, Ye Xiao put all those things into the Space. There were different kinds of things among them, so the Cosmic Hades would have surely gone mad.

Ye Xiao entered his room and just said hello to Bing-Er before he prepared to cultivate. He sat with his leg crossed and instantly got into a concentrated mode himself.

He had to get in the Space now. It was a mess in it, and it was much worse than any other times before. Ye Xiao spent all his spiritual cultivation capability to sort things out before he started to get on the cold qi...

He couldn't pay attention to anything else anymore.

As he got into the Space, expectedly, it was filled with the smell of extreme coldness in the room.

When he was dealing with the Cosmic Hades before, he did it alone. But today...

Not far from Ye Xiao, Bing-Er easily felt the coldness. She trembled and murmured, “Why are you so cold, Brother Xiao? Are you ill?”

Bing-Er felt it so difficult to bear the cold. If she didn’t care about Ye Xiao’s health, she would have gone long ago. After a while, after she forcibly stayed there, she actually felt comfortable for some reason.

It was like the cold was gone.

Bing-Er didn’t notice it though. The only thing she cared was Ye Xiao’s physical condition.

She reached out her hand to touch Ye Xiao’s forehead because she was worried. She felt that it extremely cold. Her finger nearly got frostbite. She was stunned.

“What is going on? Why is it so cold?”

Looking at Ye Xiao’s forehead with ice forming on it, she was so

worried. She was panicking. She paced around and rolled her eyes before she said, “When I felt bad, Brother Xiao always healed me with his spiritual qi. Now I have my spiritual qi, not much, but it will certainly help. I shall use my power to help my beloved Brother Xiao against the cold.”

So she thought, so she did. She got herself into Ye Xiao’s arms. On one side, she tried to warm Ye Xiao with her body, and on the other, it would be easier for her to reach her hands to Ye Xiao’s dantian and back.

Ye Xiao was strong after all. Bing-Er wanted to touch his dantian and back at the same time, so she had to get close enough to Ye Xiao body to body!

She was ready now. She felt Ye Xiao’s body was getting colder. She gritted with her teeth and used all the spiritual power she had and poured it into his body.

Ye Xiao was dealing with the cold qi inside the Space.

This time, the eruption of the cold qi was big!

He was quite experienced about it, but this time, it was too powerful. Ye Xiao had used all methods and energies he had, but still failed to control the erupting speed. He could only hope that the cold qi would be reduced as time went by.

When the cold qi was emitted out off Ye Xiao’s body, it would

consume the cold qi. As time went by, it would certainly get better.

That was exactly what was happening.

Even though the Cosmic Hades was bursting with huge energy, Ye Xiao would eventually consume it all.

At this moment, Bing-Er's weak spiritual qi entered his Jing and Mai.

In fact, Bing-Er was doing it on full effort. However, that was too weak. Ye Xiao was focusing on fighting against the cold qi, so he didn't actually notice the spiritual qi from Bing-Er. However, because of this tiny strike, the cold qi in the Space suddenly rushed out to where the tiny strike came!

Only within seconds, it converted the tiny stream of spiritual qi from Bing-Er. After that, it rushed into Bing-Er's body like flood.

Bing-Er moaned; she felt like her body was about to explode. She was scared and she wanted to shout for help, but she was unable to open her mouth.

The endless stream of cold qi instantly fully occupied and controlled her body.

Even so, Ye Xiao didn't know anything about it yet.

...

Fire on one's butt, (火烧屁股), means he is in an urgency.

Chapter 312: The Lifeless Qi in Bing-Er

Ye Xiao felt that the pressure on him has turned smaller. [Is what I'm doing to vent the cold qi working? No matter what it is, this is good.]

So he worked even harder on converting the cold qi by operating the East-rising Purple Qi.

He didn't know what was happening during the process.

Bing-Er's teeth were creaking, and within seconds, her body was covered by a thin layer of frost. She was in an even worse condition than Ye Xiao. She was trembling, and the cold air out from her breath was rising.

[Am I dying... Am I dying because of frost...] She sadly thought, [I have just been recovered. I haven't had time to have a walk outside... Now I am dying. What a shame... I haven't have enough time to stay with brother...]

At this moment...

All of a sudden...

All the cold qi that entered Bing-Er's body got a way out. It all rapidly went to the same direction. As this happened, the extreme coldness, that feeling of frozen death, suddenly disappeared...

The cold qi that entered her body all ran to that way like thousands of horses racing. That way was like leading to a black hole that had no end. It swallowed all the cold qi...

“How strange... What is happening? Why did it stop getting cold?” Bing-Er held Ye Xiao tightly. She didn’t know what was going on. As her body was getting warm again, she felt that Ye Xiao’s body was getting warm too. She felt happy about it...

Ye Xiao felt the pressure on him was getting lighter. He operated the East-rising Purple Qi on full effort. The cold qi inside the Space was rapidly decreasing, and the conversion was accelerating along with the East-rising Purple Qi.

Till this moment, Ye Xiao finally felt relieved.

He finally got through this crisis.

Opportunity came right after crisis. His body was in a dangerous situation, but it also brought him opportunity. It gave him the chance to convert the cold qi into his own energy.

He should better not delay the process.

Thus, Ye Xiao immersed himself into the cultivation of converting energy.

It was like his soul moved outside his body and everything was hazy...

The East-rising Purple Qi cycled again and again, crushing his body in it...

Ye Xiao didn't know everything. He didn't know that the East-rising Purple Qi got so close to the cold qi, so it entered Bing-Er's Jing and Mai, and ran again and again inside her body too.

Every round it ran, it brought out some dark purple qi and converted it into the energy of the East-rising Purple Qi...

As it kept going, more and more of that dark purple thing got drawn out from her Jing and Mai. Gradually, it became like a mass of fog...

Ye Xiao was in an unconscious condition, yet he could still feel the change of the heat. He felt it getting cold again, so he thought it was the reverse strike from the rest of the cold qi. As such, he decisively started to convert it again...

Bing-Er stayed in Ye Xiao's arms. She was able to hold it on at first, but then she felt sleepier and sleepier. She just fell asleep inside Ye Xiao's arms...

She had no idea what a huge mystical change was taking place inside her body...

She had a little girl's mind at the moment after all.

She didn't know the danger hidden in such change. She felt better, so she didn't worry at all. Besides, she felt Ye Xiao's body getting warm and well again, so she felt relieved. That was why she was relaxed and fell asleep. The conversion inside her body was gradually continuing as she was in sleep.

Bing-Er didn't know what was going on, but at least she could feel the situation getting better. Ye Xiao totally knew nothing about everything. He just kept concentrating on cultivation to convert the energy. He kept boosting it, trying to get through all this.

It was a powerful eruption of the Cosmic Hades after all. If he didn't get it solved soon, it would surely damage the Nine Spaces. If things got too bad, those materials he put into the Space would have done what the last thing he wanted them to do in the world.

That meant he would have lost a god-given opportunity to upgrade his cultivation capability.

The entire Space was blown by the cold qi. Only the egg was sitting tight on that plate. It didn't care about what was going on around it at all. No matter how strong the cold qi was, it wouldn't affect Mr. Egg. Apparently, it was in quite a high grade.

The blowing cold qi was continuing. It wouldn't bother the egg, yet all the other things in the Space could be impacted.

Ye Xiao was focusing on dealing with the cold qi crisis. He never realized that since he had reached the second level of the East-

rising Purple Qi, his cultivation was improved, but not improved big enough.

The real power of the second-level East-rising Purple Qi should be just like this. In fact, it should be much stronger.

He didn't know that he had just reached it, so surely, he wouldn't be able to have such a powerful strength. Only after he went much further in cultivating it could he truly have the real power of the second-level of East-rising Purple Qi. Once he reached top of the second-level East-rising Purple Qi—the Purple Qi Descends.

At this moment, Ye Xiao was unconsciously fighting against the enormous cold qi with the help of the Nine Spaces. Wood Space, Gold Space, Water Space...

Different powers automatically rushed into his body to help him defend from the cold qi.

Under such a situation, it required the owner of the Space to dominate the powers in it to defend the Cosmic Hades.

In other word, Ye Xiao took charge of the Space. The Nine Spaces all followed his lead!

At least this time, in this dangerous moment, he finally controlled all the power in the Nine Spaces. Naturally, he had a feeling of “I am king of this world”. Besides, he was Xiao Monarch in his previous life after all. At this moment, he felt like he was

“descending” to the world.

The spiritual qi was running after the East-rising Purple Qi. It started to run around his body.

Such circulation got into Bing-Er’s body too. Bing-Er and Ye Xiao were now connected. The cold qi stream was running inside both of their Jing and Mai, thus, the power of the Purple Qi Descends followed into her body too.

That made a special pattern. The purple qi was created inside Ye Xiao, and it ran into Bing-Er’s body along with the cold qi. It circulated inside Bing-Er’s Jing and Mai and then returned to Ye Xiao’s dantian. That was a repeating circulation.

It didn’t end up unsophisticated though. As the circulation went on, inside Bing-Er’s Jing and Mai, there was another kind of cold qi rising.

If Ye Xiao had a clear mind at the moment, he could recognize it. That was lifeless qi. It was the same thing inside Bing Xinyue’s and Wenren Chuchu’s bodies.

...

Chapter 313: Indescribable Purple Cloud

The cold lifeless qi inside Bing-Er's body was even more horrible and pure. It was far beyond those inside Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu. However, they were basically the same thing.

There was actually so much horrible lifeless qi inside Bing-Er's body!

The lifeless qi that just came out was so powerful. If it was inside some ordinary person's body, that person should have been dead for a long time. Even Wenren Chuchu, a Sky Origin Stage cultivator, might fail to handle it. If it was Bing Xinyue, maybe she could hold on with it for sometime, but it was only slowing down the death!

That was a slight stream of the power of that lifeless qi!

The horrible and extremely cold lifeless qi showed up like tides inside Bing-Er's body. It seemed endless!

In fact, taking Ye Xiao's present cultivation capability into consideration, taking care of the cold lifeless qi inside Bing Xinyue's body was the best he could do. The extreme cold lifeless qi inside Bing-Er's body was in a much higher level. He could only realize that it was a problem and got away from it. If he forcibly hang on with it, he would be frozen right away and couldn't get out anymore!

However, he was in an unconscious state at the moment. He was

carrying the powers from the Nine Spaces to operate the power of the Purple Qi Descends. The lifeless qi inside Bing-Er was accidentally activated. It seemed to be locked inside somewhere, and it could only get out a bit while the purple qi was descending. Luckily, it couldn't form into a much bigger crisis.

That meant the two powers were fighting against each other in the unconsciousness.

However, the two victims were unconscious at the moment. In the two streams of power, the purple qi was well organized, so it was in a higher position. The lifeless qi was forced out accidentally, so it was going to an end for sure.

The purple qi removed it bit by bit from a different location.

The power of purple qi was like the burning sun in the sky as it crashed into the cold lifeless qi; they were naturally enemies. The power of purple qi rushed in like tides.

Everywhere it went, it was like the sun burning in the dark. Where the sun went, this light would come.

Under the suppression from its natural enemy, those tiny streams of cold lifeless qi weren't able to resist. Within seconds, all the cold lifeless qi was gone.

It was even converted into a part of the power of the "sun"...

The Purple Qi Descends rushed around Bing-Er's Jing and Mai quickly and fiercely.

It was like a tiny sun, lighting up every corner of her body.

The lifeless qi inside Bing-Er completely disappeared.

It was quite a change. If any one of them was both awake during the process, Ye Xiao would have been killed by the cold lifeless qi while fighting against it. Bing-Er would have been seriously damaged by it.

However... By the will of gods, they were both lost in consciousness.

The enormous cold lifeless qi didn't harm them, instead, it was totally converted into powerful spiritual power hidden inside Ye Xiao's body.

The lifeless qi inside Bing-Er's body was decreased by one third at least after this!

It was an astonishing amount.

If Ye Xiao was awake, even if he could avoid getting damaged, it would take him half a year to convert such an amount of lifeless qi no matter how hard he tried!

However, now it only took him two days. What a strange situation.

Two days separately.

He finished such a huge task!

Time was passing by...

For a long while, Bing-Er woke up. She blinked and saw Ye Xiao in front of her.

“That is weird. Why did I fall asleep...” Bing-Er murmured, “Brother Xiao, are you ok now?”

She reached her hand to touch Ye Xiao’s forehead. It felt normal now, so she felt relieved. “Thank god. Brother Xiao is fine now.”

As she got to know Ye Xiao was well, she started to look around and she found her small hands were covered by something black. She screamed, “Ah. What happened. That is disgusting...”

She smelled it and found that it was a bit smelly. She might have lost her memory, but girls all loved cleanness. How could she bear the dirt on herself. She got out from Ye Xiao’s arms and went for a shower.

Ye Xiao felt like he just had a dream.

It was a weird and mystical dream!

It was generally a good dream though!

Since he started to deal with the cold qi, he was doing it wholeheartedly. While he was so busy doing it, he surprisedly found that there was a mass of purple cloud in the sky.

The endless cold qi that filled up the entire Space was absorbed by the purple cloud in a big amount.

It kept absorbing the cold qi without a stop, and it absorbed a big amount. Because of its help, the pressure on Ye Xiao was decreased by one third!

Ye Xiao felt relieved all of a sudden, and he felt he had power to spare. He was experience on dealing with the eruption of the cold qi, so It wasn't difficult for him anymore. This time, it was just too much cold qi at a time which exhausted him. Now that one third of the cold qi was drawn away by the purple cloud, he surely felt it quite proficient and easy. He made a full effort on absorbing and converting, in order to get through the crisis sooner. Ye Xiao felt that the purple cloud was just right in the sky. Although it was, he could still reach it, which made him attracted to it.

He tried to get close to it, and he felt that the purple cloud was trying get close to him too. No matter how they tried, they just couldn't get any closer.

However, every attempt made Ye Xiao felt better.

He didn't know if that feeling was real or was just an illusion!

As the power of East-rising Purple Qi got bigger, it was getting faster too. Ye Xiao could feel himself getting stronger while the purple cloud was becoming more splendid.

Ye Xiao could finally be sure about one thing now. As he improved his East-rising Purple Qi a bit, he could get a bit closer to the purple cloud!

They would eventually get together!

East-rising Purple Qi, the Purple Qi Descends...

The mystical and powerful energy was rushing inside his Jing and Mai, and even Ye Xiao himself could hear the sound of the spiritual qi rushing.

That sound seemed to be real, but at the same time, it was like an illusion. It chilled Ye Xiao up like nothing he had experienced before.

The cold qi was getting less and less under all his efforts...

Finally, Ye Xiao seemed to hear a sound of "boom". It was his

body.

The purple cloud exploded when that sound came up. It exploded into pieces, flying in the sky and disappearing from the reality.

...

Chapter 314: The Giant!

Ye Xiao was stunned, and then he felt every inch of his Jing and Mai was full of power. The power was so strong that it was rushing fiercely back into his dantian!

With another sound of “boom”, he passed out.

Before he passed out, he seemed to hear some weird voice.

- Clatter -

[What is it?

Running water?]

At this moment, he still had a little clear mind. He heard the sound of Bing-Er having a shower...

The next moment, he passed out.

The only thing he knew was that his spiritual mind had entered some empty space.

There was a gleamy path in front to him, and it didn't seem to have an end.

Ye Xiao was walking on that path without a destination. He just stared at the light far ahead of him, and he followed it all along.

He walked and walked and walked...

He didn't know how long he had been walking. He felt like he had travelled thousands of miles. The only thing he could see was the light far ahead of him. It was silent and dark, and it felt like he was the only one left in the world!

He had been walking for a long time and for such a long distance, but the light was still far away.

If he was an ordinary person, he would have long lost his patience, [Why have I not arrived yet? Is anything wrong? Did I go the wrong way? Maybe this is the wrong path for me?]

In fact, he was thinking, [I will keep walking along this way. I may not be able to reach the light in any short time, as long as I keep walking ahead, I will reach it someday. I don't believe there is any place I can never reach. I wonder how far away is it that I actually cannot reach it after walking for so long. I have to figure out what it is making the light there. I have to know what I am walking to!]

So he thought, so he did. He just kept walking.

When he just made up his mind to keep walking, that light suddenly became so big. - Puff! - It actually came in front of him.

Ye Xiao didn't know if he did walk to the light or the light moved to him.

No matter what, the light came to him!

He had a close look at it and found out it was actually a mountain!

No! It wasn't a mountain! It was a person!

It was a huge man who was like a mountain!

That man stood there with his head reaching the sky, and his hands like the moon and the sun. His feet was pasted on the ground, his eyes were closed, and he didn't move a bit.

Ye Xiao stood in front of this man and felt himself so small.

That man was huge. His toe alone was thousands of times bigger than a human body!

Ye Xiao was sure about one thing. If that man fell down, even if he has recovered his former Dao Origin Stage cultivation, he wouldn't be able to get away from being hit by it, no matter what he tried.

He would just get smashed to death!

There wouldn't any luck for him!

“There is actually such a huge person in the world!” Ye Xiao was surprised and exclaimed.

He thought that god's creation was truly marvelous. Ye Xiao looked at the light. He had been shocked by the size of that giant man, so he didn't realize that the light wasn't from that man. It was from something on the left hand of that giant man.

[What is this man?

Why am I here?]

Ye Xiao felt that it must have something to do with the Boundless Space, and it was also related to the East-rising Purple Qi he was cultivating. However, he couldn't even imagine what he was doing, and what he could actually do in this place.

Was it that giant man who made him come?

He was lost in thoughts, and then he suddenly shouted, “What is your purpose to make me come here?”

It was extremely silent. Ye Xiao was surprised that even he himself couldn't hear the words he said.

In other words, he didn't actually make any sound at all. He wasn't able to.

Ye Xiao couldn't believe it, so he tried hard again, "What is this place?"

No sound at all.

He still couldn't hear himself.

He was stunned.

[What is going on?]

He looked up at the giant man and found nothing. He lowered his head and tried to figure out a solution for all this.

However, no matter how he tried, he couldn't think of anything practical. He tried to get back to his body. He knew that it was only his spiritual mind that arrived in this place; his soul was not in his body at the moment.

As long as his spiritual mind returned to his body, the scene would disappear right away!

That was how he was connected to the Boundless Space. Where he stood right now might be some special space, and perhaps it could work like the Boundless Space. That would allow him to

come and go from this space as he wished. Maybe he couldn't learn more about this space.

However, it was frustrating, Ye Xiao couldn't actually do it.

He tried some other ways, but none of them brought him back to his body.

The giant man was there in front of him all the time. He didn't disappear; he just quietly stood there with his eyes closed.

[What should I do to get back?] Ye Xiao asked himself in his head.

He slowly calmed down and then sat on the floor with his legs crossed. He was peacefully lost in thoughts.

[Why would such a giant man show up in front of me?]

[What is all this for? Why? What is all this going to show me?]

Ye Xiao frowned and thought.

[I came here while I am operating the East-rising Purple Qi. It must be some phase about the East-rising Purple Qi. Maybe this is the real second level of the East-rising Purple Qi. I will need to get pass this phase! ...] He kept thinking and doubtfully made such a conclusion.

While he was having such thought, something happened around him.

He looked up with fear.

He saw that giant man open his eyes and slowly gaze into the distance.

At the moment, endless colorful clouds showed up in this world.

Rainbows showed up one after another far in the sky. They just hang in the sky without moving, like endless bridges.

The giant opened his eyes and gazed at the distance. He didn't move a bit.

He slowly opened his mouth like he was going to say something...

...

Chapter 315: Yin Yang Eyes

[It really is. I made a good guess.] Ye Xiao thought, [The eyes of this giant man had no emotions. There is only solemnness and rightfulness.]

[His eyes seemed to be focused on something, but in fact, he is watching down on the mortals. It is looking down on the world, but it is not arrogant... It is like... all living things suffer? Maybe what his eyes are showing is some kind of... mercy?]

Ye Xiao thought in mind.

[No. It is not just mercy. There is some... heartlessness, cruelty. It is some kind of... decisiveness. There is no hesitation with it...]

[It is some murderous intent... There is also a sense of righteousness in it.]

Ye Xiao spoke in mind, [Is this telling me that people are suffering so I need to save them? No. It shouldn't be. If it is, there wouldn't be that murderous intent...]

[If not, what is it then?]

[This giant man stands on the floor reaching the sky and holds the sun and the moon...]

Ye Xiao felt that maybe he understood something, but it was difficult to summarize them. He frowned because he couldn't collect all his thoughts to make a conclusion.

[The giant man opened his mouth. It feels like he wants to talk but he couldn't... It means... He has something to tell me, but he doesn't know how to say it or he cannot say it...]

[What does he want to tell me then?]

[Is it said that there should be some secret between the master and his disciple, however, cultivation requires people to learn by themselves. No one's master can guide them forever... That is talking about some high-level method. There is also some saying like 'the master teaches the trade, but the apprentice's skill is self-made'. That is about some low-class cultivation...]

[I guess I have to think it through myself then!]

He frowned and lost himself in thoughts. He sat with his legs crossed and closed his eyes. Peacefully, he was deeply immersed in cultivation.

As time passed, he didn't know how long it had taken him. It might be one day, one month, one year or even longer. Suddenly, there was a word that showed up in his head.

“Human!”

It was just this one word.

After such a long time, that was the only thing that showed up for him!

[Human!] Ye Xiao thought, [What is... human?]

[There are men, women, good people, bad people...] Ye Xiao kept thinking.

[Human beings in the world have so many desires. They ask for so much. They have so many... thoughts. No matter what, there is something they have in common... They are all human beings. Only when they are human beings can they have desires and other emotions.]

[A man, no matter whether he is strong or weak, good or bad, he must be a human being. That is all the questions to begin with.]

[That is not enough though.]

[How can we not divide evil from sacredness? A man should try to be a good man.]

[What makes one a good man?]

[To be a good man, but not to be a stupid man. It would be better to be a bad guy than a stupid man. So, what to do? What not to do?

There are so many arguments...]

[No! There are not so many arguments...]

[Good or bad, strong or weak... There are many opinions about that. But it seems nothing is about that...]

[Or maybe...]

[It is rather simple to be a human being... To be a real man!]

[Human!]

This thought was like a lightning that struck on Ye Xiao's head. It suddenly cleared his mind!

[To be a human, we need to distinguish good from bad, white from black. We shall stick on praying virtue and punishing vice. We should walk on the right way! We should save people who suffer, and stop those who do evil... Hmmm. Stopping is not enough. We should kill them! We kill them all! No mercy!]

[A bad guy might not target me forever, but if I let him go, he will hurt others, and that will be my fault. There are too many people that are easy to get hurt!]

[So I must wipe them out and prevent bad things!]

[To be a man, I should stand right on the earth while reaching the sky like this giant man. I shall reach the sky, step on the floor, hold the sun and the moon, and embrace the river and the mountain. I shall have a clear conscience!]

He was enlightened and he murmured, “To be a man, I should stand right on the earth reaching the sky like this giant man. I shall reach the sky, step on the floor, hold the sun and the moon, embrace the river and the mountain. I shall have a clear conscience! Kill the evil is to praise the angel. I shall kill whatever should be killed. I shall show no mercy! Even if there will be a mountain of dead bodies behind me and a long blood river under my feet, even if I will be cursed by all the people in the world, as long as I feel unashamed... I shall be a real human!”

“That is... human!”

Ye Xiao opened his eyes and looked at the giant man.

His eyes were concentrated and fearless.

The eyes of that giant man actually had some changes.

His solid, murderous, arrogant eyes gradually turned soft and gentle. There seemed to be smile in it.

- Boom! - And then the giant just disappeared.

As the giant man vanished, the world started to shake and

explode. It became pieces of stars.

At the same time, Ye Xiao returned to his body.

He could hear a voice talking to him though.

He felt like it was from the sky and also felt like it was from inside his heart!

“... Hahaha... I am not alone!” That voice was clear and happy. Ye Xiao seemed to have a vision of a man looking at himself with a smile.

“Ye Xiao, now that you understand what is a real man, I should give this martial art to help you conquer the world!”

And then Ye Xiao felt that there was a martial art method popping up in his brain. He didn't feel strange to it at all, like he had already cultivated this martial art for thousands of years.

Yin Yang Eyes!

That was the name of it.

And then Ye Xiao felt his eyes were itchy and painful. Tears came out, and he couldn't stop them from falling. He tried to keep his eyes closed to stop the tear, yet he failed.

He couldn't stop it, so he just let it flow. His eyes were getting more and more itchy, and it was so uncomfortable.

He didn't feel well, but he knew that it was the Yin Yang Eyes making a change on him. It wasn't a bad thing; it wouldn't hurt his eyes!

However, he wonder what this Yin Yang Eyes could be used for?

...

Chapter 316: An Ashamed Monarch

While he was deep in thought, he heard a panicking voice screaming, “Brother Xiao... Brother Xiao... What happened to you? Why are you suddenly crying... You cry... so much tears. Who upsets you... Brother Xiao... You... Could... Could you stop crying?”

The voice was full of concern and worry. It seemed that if Ye Xiao kept letting his tears down, the owner of this voice would cry with him...

Ye Xiao opened his eyes, only to see an extremely pretty girl looking at him with worry on her face.

That was exactly the girl who had a perfect shape of body, pretty face and a little girl’s mind. Hmm. After Ye Xiao’s guidance for some time, Bing-Er was getting more and more mature though.

Ye Xiao smiled and said, “Be good, Bing-Er. I am fine. I am getting better. I am not crying...”

While he was speaking, tears came out.

His nose was blocked, and he was tearing up, so that made him sound like weeping.

Obviously, Ye Xiao’s words were not so persuasive!

Bing-Er was more concerned and she said, “But you are crying. You don’t want me to worry, so you try to comfort me... Brother, you are lying...”

Ye Xiao said with tears, “No. I really am not crying. Really. Look closer?”

And then he forcibly made a smile.

It was even worse than crying when he smiled with tears on his face.

Bing-Er was stunned and then choked with sobs, “You are still crying. You are crying. Brother Xiao, I felt sad looking at you crying... I want to cry too...”

[Oh no.] Ye Xiao thought. He just wanted to say something to comfort her, but Bing-Er had already sat not the floor and started crying. She just burst into a rage of tears...

That was some world-shocking cry!

Ye Xiao panicked.

[Oh my god. The thing that I am afraid the most is a woman crying...]

If a woman cried in front of him, he would never know what to

do. Not at all.

He made up his mind and held Bing-Er into his arms tight. With tears on him, he said gently, “Don’t cry, Bing-Er. I won’t cry too. I am not crying, really. Don’t cry. Don’t.”

In his mind, he was cursing, [What the heck is this martial art? It actually made me tear for such a long time. Tears I have had in my two lives in total would never be more than I have now. That is shameful.

Please don’t let Uncle Song come!]

Bing-Er was still tearing, “If you stop crying... purr... Bing-Er will stop too... purr... But you are still crying. You never stop. I... Purr...”

She was getting worse and louder.

Ye Xiao’s eyes were full of tears too. He really had no idea what to do with Bing-Er now.

He had to just let it be.

Tears kept coming out from his eyes. It came out and out and out... like spring water...

...

The gods didn't seem to like to listen to Ye Xiao's prayer. Song Jue heard the deplorable cry and finally couldn't hold his curiosity. [What on earth happened?]

He ignored Ye Xiao's words "do not get in my room..."

Ye Xiao forbade people to get in his room because Bing-Er was there. Bing-Er was a little girl, and she knew barely anything, so he made such a rule.

In fact, at the same time, he wanted to keep his secrets.

Song Jue thought that he was just trying to do something that he wouldn't want to be seen, so he agreed with ambiguous thoughts. Since then, he had never entered Ye Xiao's room.

At the moment, he heard such a deplorable cry and worried that there might be something serious. He couldn't think more of the rule anymore.

He pushed the door and was shocked.

"What... What is going with you two?"

Song Jue saw them holding each other. The guy was weeping while the girl was crying loudly like death was going to separate them. He was shocked.

[What happened to them?

I didn't see anything special? Why are they crying so bad?

Besides... It is normal that Bing-Er is crying... Nothing serious. Maybe Ye Xiao did something to her? Well, even if nothing happened, she would cry too. But... But why is Ye Xiao crying?]

Song Jue believed one thing about Ye Xiao as he thought he knew his nephew very well. There might be a lot of people that were capable of killing him, but if there was anybody that could make him cry... Song Jue believed there was surely none!

However, the fact was against what he believed apparently, even though Song Jue would rather chop his head off rather than believing it.

Ye Xiao's face was covered by tears and snot, and he was breathing heavily. Apparently, he was crying because of sadness...

Song Jue was blank all of a sudden. [Is anything really serious happening?]

Ye Xiao couldn't stop his tears. He watched Song Jue open the door and get in. He really wanted to cry now as he saw him, [This is so shameful...]

After a while, Song Jue finally understood the truth after Ye Xiao explained everything to him. However, he didn't seem to really understand it.

“You cry because of just a martial art... I haven't seen any strange martial art like that. I haven't even heard of any... Who do you think you can lie to, little bastard... What is going on?”

Song Jue murmured and got out of the room.

He decided to leave the entire room for the two crying people...

[Ah. I am truly lost now. I don't understand so many things these days...]

Song Jue sighed.

Song Jue left after murmuring about “girls”, “guys” and stuff. Song Jue regretted so much that he hoped he could just hit on the wall and kill himself.

[What... What the heck is that?]

Since that day, Ye Xiao hadn't stopped tearing at all.

Tears fell down in daytime, and also at night. Tears fell down when he was sitting, also when he was walking. He ate, tears would fall down. He slept, tears would down. Anyways, tears kept

coming!

It was like there was a huge river inside his body, and his eyes was the way out.

The river was a river of tears, and it was inexhaustible...

Before that river was dried out, the tears wouldn't stop.

Luckily, Bing-Er didn't cry. It was eventually fine when she understood it. She might lose her memory, but she was clever. After Song Jue left, she knew that her Brother Xiao wasn't sad, so she stopped.

For the days to come, she just stared at Ye Xiao's eyes with curiosity, like she was looking at some rare animal. [Wow, weird. A man has more tears than a woman...]

...

Chapter 317: Bing-Er Grew Up

She was curious and she didn't stop wiping Ye Xiao's tears with a white clean napkin, although she could never wipe it out...

She would follow Song Jue's instruction to prepare a wash basin of warm water for Ye Xiao so that he could drink it all. It kept Ye Xiao from getting dry in the eyes.

At the first few days, Song Jue worried that such a situation might damage Ye Xiao's eyes. After he made sure Ye Xiao was indeed cultivating some special martial art, he started to try pouring water into Ye Xiao. The eyes would be safe, but the problem of dehydration should be considered.

It would be a legendary joke... if he died because of dehydration due to crying!

Ye Xiao tried to object, but he failed, so he had to drink water while he was tearing. Tears went into the wash basin, and he drank it back, before it became tears again.

He had cursed this martial art for million times badly in mind already!

[What kind of bullsh*t martial art!

Where should I keep my dignity now...]

Thus, the next few days, Lord Ye naturally wouldn't go out of the house for any second. This period of time became the days that he behaved himself the most in his second life!

He didn't even step out of his room.

That was full four days!

Song Jue couldn't help thinking that misfortune never came without good luck. He never expected that a tearing problem could actually keep his young master at home. If he got to know it earlier, maybe this uncle would personally produce such an event himself. God really was good at fooling people!

During these days, Ye Xiao had quite a lot of spare time. Bing-Er was the only person who could see Ye Xiao like this for now. Ye Xiao decided to accept the truth. [Bing-Er should be fine with my look now. I don't think it matters if she sees me more. She is only no older than nine, actually...]

Thus, while Lord Ye was weeping, he started some lessons for Bing-Er.

Hmm, he just went on with the lessons...

During the four days, the tears he had in total could drown himself to death! Even so, after his hard work day and night, Bing-Er's mind was growing rapidly.

Ye Xiao even had this feeling.

It was like Bing-Er had been through four years.

She seemed to know much more now, so she had more to consider now.

Four days earlier, when Bing-Er was sleeping, she wouldn't sleep well if Ye Xiao wasn't with her. She would turn round and round all night and would go to Ye Xiao's arms before she could finally fall asleep.

However, three days earlier, only after one day, Bing-Er began to feel embarrassed... She had scruples.

Her face would turn red and her eyes would be soft and gentle. It made Ye Xiao really want to be a monster...

Two days earlier, that was after two days, Bing-Er was behaving like a big girl. She would blush when she spoke. She would be silent even when she had something to say. It made her more attractive. That really made people want to do something wrong...

One day earlier... Ye Xiao could tell that Bing-Er still wanted to stay in his arms all day long, but she could already restrain herself. She would hold her desire and decisively refuse to sleep with Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao had lost his sweet little service now...

At the moment...

Tears in Ye Xiao's eyes finally stopped.

It wouldn't be just alright. His eyes turned totally red, and he looked like a girl who had been raped and crying for a long time...

"My lord, Bing-Er want to... But..." Bing-Er blushed. She kept rubbing her clothes with her small hands. She said, "... It's just... Intimate contact is improper between men and women... This..."

Ye Xiao was stunned.

[What? Intimate contact is...? Isn't it something I just taught her yesterday? So now she is using it to refuse me?

I just want to kiss her as a reward. I didn't think much about it.]

Ye Xiao's reward to Bing-Er had always been, "Bing-Er, if you improved yourself, Brother Xiao will give you a kiss on cheek as a reward."

Bing-Er was so happy about getting such a reward. Every time when she got some improvement, she would reach her face to Ye Xiao with an expression of "kiss me". She would get close to Ye Xiao with her eyes closed waiting for the reward.

And then it changed. She became shy, and she would just sit there still with a blushed face waiting for Ye Xiao to come and kiss

her...

At the moment, she actually refused to take the “reward”. It was a “reward” that this young evil man used to take advantage of her.

[Habit makes things natural, doesn't it? But it doesn't work on Bing-Er?]

“What?” Ye Xiao looked at Bing-Er.

Bing-Er's hair was tied up high. Her eyes were changing expressions as her face blushed.

That is:

“Limpid her soul is while her bones are like jades. Pretty her face is like flowers while her eyebrows are like willow leaves. She who should be the most beautiful one in heavens [surely must be the first beauty in mortal world!](#)”

“Nothing...” Bing-Er lowered her head and shyly spoke, “If you really want to... Bing-Er, Bing-Er would never refuse... But... But...”

She repeated “but” several times as her face turned red even more. She was trying to say something, but she didn't.

“I see...” Ye Xiao was enlightened. He laughed out loud. “My

Bing-Er has grown up now. She is a big girl now... She will blush now. Hahahaha...”

Bing-Er was shy being laughed at by Ye Xiao. Even her neck turned red with her face. She moved her waist seemingly showing bashfulness.

Ye Xiao smiled and said, “Since Bing-Er has grown up and you must be sensible now, the way I give you reward may be improper. Hmm. Let me see... How should I reward you now?”

Bing-Er smiled bashfully. She quietly looked up at Ye Xiao and said, “If you really want to give me that... reward... Bing-Er... will be pleased to take it...”

When she spoke to the last few words, her voice had become like the sound of mosquito.

She lowered her head like her head was buried into her towering breasts. She just didn’t want to raise her head anymore.

Ye Xiao said, “No. You said it. It is improper, so we have to make a change...”

Bing-Er exhaled of relief. In her eyes, there was actually a sense of disappointment. She said, “Anyway... Bing-Er is... your girl. Whenever you want... to touch me, you can... There will be no other man who could touch me even on my hair!”

When she said that, she was extremely bashful. However, at the end, she sounded very decisive and determined. Apparently, she was telling the truth.

It was what she thought, and she wouldn't change it!

—————

秋水为神玉为骨，芙蓉如面柳如眉，天上宫阙唯绝色，人间亘古第一美！

Chapter 318: What A Martial Art!

Ye Xiao heard it and he was shocked.

And then some words that Bing-Er said stunned him.

“... Am your... girl!”

“Your girl!”

Ye Xiao thought about that strange giant man and that weird martial art!

He couldn't help but get lost in thoughts. He totally forgot about the beauty that was in front of her.

Bing-Er saw that he was in thoughts, so she reckoned he must be worrying about something important. She wouldn't dare to interrupt him, so she just quietly left.

Before these days, she would have just lingered around and wouldn't go. However, she now understood something must be done first while others later.

Now she was “sensible”!

As Ye Xiao conjectured, Bing-Er should have a twelve years old girl's mind now. In fact, she was a sensible one.

It only took him several days to finish this.

That meant Bing-Er should have learned a lot before; she must have been well educated. It would take her just another several days to grow up to eighteen years old.

Ye Xiao felt successful about it.

At the moment, he was lost in thoughts about that Yin Yang Eyes.

He activated his spiritual mind and tried to check the space in his head. As expected, he found a book in the air shining golden glows. When he started to look at it, that book turned into some golden light dots and then disappeared.

In his head, some words about martial art kept showing up.

“Universe up in the sky; Yin Yang on the earth. Yin and Yang complements one another, that leads to the birth of all... What is Yin Yang?... Human, he who controls Yin and Yang will succeed. People are too stupid to understand it. Now there is this method about Yin Yang. An eye sees the fortune, while the other differentiates Yin Yang. That is Yin Yang Eyes! ... People all have eyes. The left one is Yang, while the right one is Yin. They see the movement of sea and land; they see the sun, the moon and the stars... They see those that mortals cannot see, and watch those that mortals cannot watch... All the mystery is in the Yin Yang Eyes...”

“First grade is to see through the secret of the world. The second grade is to see through the Yin Yang in the world. The third grade is to see through the sun the moon and the stars...”

After reading this martial art book, Ye Xiao was shocked. He couldn't help thinking about the East-rising Purple Qi he had been cultivating. He had chosen to cultivate both Yin and Yang aspects on that.

Now there was this Yin Yang Eyes for him.

Would they be related to each other?

However, that was not the question he should think of at the moment. His East-rising Purple Qi was still weak. He hadn't started the Yin Yang Eyes yet. Even though they were truly related, it wouldn't show the connection now!

As the Yin Yang Eyes book said, this martial art should be a truly marvelous one. Now that he had the opportunity, he would surely take it.

So he thought, so he did. He calmed down himself and then cultivated for a while following the instructions of Yin Yang Eyes. After cultivating for ninety-nine rounds by performing his spiritual qi, he felt that he had already grasped the method. He was happy about it, so he started to operate this special martial art. He focused on his right eye and intently observed it.

The first feeling was that his right eye was uncomfortable. It felt like the tears were coming out again.

He was shocked. He didn't want to start weeping again. It would be such a tragic if he did.

Luckily, that feeling only lasted for seconds.

After that, he was totally astonished by what he saw through his right eye.

He saw...

He saw another world in front of him.

Things were still the same in his room. However, everything was covered by a dense mass of fog. It was cold and full of sorrow like the world beneath the ground. His room was actually horrible like the hell!

Ye Xiao was shocked. He hurriedly dismissed the Yin Yang Eyes. When he looked around again, there was nothing cold and sorrowful at all.

He couldn't believe it, so he operated the Yin Yang Eyes again. He was shocked again as what he could see was exactly like before. There were even some dim shadows walking around.

Those shadows didn't feel like real, but they could change their appearance. Sometimes, they were tall, while sometimes, they were short; sometimes fat while sometimes slim...

They didn't notice Ye Xiao. They just walked around like they were busy with something...

With no reason, a cold wind blew. The shadows were all gone, like they never existed...

Ye Xiao was freaking out. He hurriedly dismissed the martial art again.

“What is this Yin Yang Eyes for?”

Ye Xiao was troubled. “So it can show me the ghosts? Isn't it just fooling myself? Why do I get such strange martial art?”

Rubbing the gooseflesh that appeared on his body, he was frustrated.

[Yin Yang Eyes deals with Yin Yang like this? ...

Is it real?

It is totally a different thing comparing to the Yin and Yang attributes of my East-rising Purple Qi. It is completely not the same

thing!]

As he was shocked, he decided not to use the Yin Eye of Yin Yang Eyes anymore.

However, he still had no idea what the Yang Eye could do?

So driven by the curiosity, he operated the martial art again to activate his left eye, with fear in mind. At the beginning, it felt much like when he did the right eye. Apparently, when he operated Yin Yang Eyes, his eyes would feel uncomfortable and he would feel like to weep.

The feeling of tears didn't appear since Ye Xiao tried not to let it.

He was astonished at the moment, so he wouldn't want to be weeping at all.

In front of him, there was a gorgeous beauty walking outside from her room. She was naked. Every step she walked made her... on her chest shake.

It was shocking. It was surprising. It was soul-stirring...

All of a sudden, Ye Xiao really didn't know how to describe the scene in his sight. His head was in a mess. He himself didn't know what he was thinking right now...

That beautiful girl stared at him with an innocent look and curious eyes. Deep inside her eyes, there was love...

Ye Xiao was shocked and he looked at this gorgeous lady. He couldn't prevent his blood boil and rush up to his head.

He felt itchy in his nose. His nose was about to bleed, and the blood would be rushing out like spring water!

...

Chapter 319: Why Are You Naked?

[Oh my god. What wrong have I done? I have just stopped tearing up, but now the blood?!]

It was Bing-Er walking out from the inner room. She saw Ye Xiao looking at her distractedly. He was so concentrated and so absorbed that his eyeballs nearly popped out. She blushed and said with happiness, “Brother Xiao, why are you looking at me like that?”

Her voice was like the bird tweeting deep in the valley. It woke Ye Xiao and he distractedly said, “Bing-Er... You... Why are you not wearing anything?”

Bing-Er was shocked. She looked down on her body and looked up with confusion in eyes, “Brother Xiao... I am wearing everything decently... I am not naked! Nonsense!”

She felt both shy and happy.

She roughly had a twelve years old mind now. She thought, [Brother Xiao looks at me like that thinking the image of me naked... Humph. Brother Xiao is such a playboy! What a hooligan... That is so embarrassing...]

[Urh?] Ye Xiao was surprised. He looked to her again and what he could see was only the white skin of her like snow. As she was breathing, some parts were shaking...

Again, it was so shocking to him. He couldn't help but feel his blood erupting between his legs again...

He wasn't crazy after all. He knew there must be something wrong, so he closed his eyes and took deep breath. He suppressed the urge and dismissed the Yin Yang Eyes martial art. When he looked to her again, he saw Bing-Er in white dress with a calm and peaceful face. She was standing there quietly with a smile on her face. In her eyes, there were glows of joy...

[She Is wearing everything!

How on earth is she naked?]

Ye Xiao shook his head and thought with confusion, [Was it my illusion?]

He operated the Yin Yang Eyes again and looked at Bing-Er. All of a sudden... she again became... a naked beauty in front of him.

This time, he was even closer to her!

Because Bing-Er worried about him as he acted weirdly, she walked over to him to check on him!

As she got closer to him, every inch of her body became vivid and clear in Ye Xiao's sight!

Ye Xiao couldn't suppress the urge anymore.

- Puff! -

Ye Xiao raised up his head and closed his eyes. He stopped the martial art, but it was too late. Two streams of blood rushed out from his nose flying into the air. After a while, it slowly flowed down...

It was such an... embarrassing scene!

Ye Xiao felt he was disgraced.

[That is shameful!

I have never been ashamed like this before, not in both lives!

What happened to me these days? First I teared; now I bleed. Can I have some peace?!

Goddamn it! It is all that stupid Yin Yang Eyes's fault. The Right Eye scared me, and the Left Eye set me up. It is simply fooling me around!

Yin Yang Eyes is absolutely a martial art that fools you to death!]

“Brother Xiao, your nose is bleeding again. Are you alright...”
Bing-Er exclaimed.

She hurriedly took out a napkin to wipe the blood on Ye Xiao’s face. While she was doing it, she said with concerns, “Brother Xiao, why is your nose bleeding like this? Is there something wrong with you? Should you go to the doctor? You can never delay such a thing... What should you do if you keep bleeding like this...”

Facing such soft and gentle caring from her, Ye Xiao felt terribly embarrassed.

[You little girl. How long since you have learnt some words. Look how you have a sharp mouth. Should I consider it a fortune or not!

Ah... How do I answer that?

That is hellishly embarrassing...]

Ye Xiao covered his nose and embarrassedly coughed. He barely wanted to talk.

He calmed down and felt so frustrated that he nearly wanted to cry.

[See through all fakes, reveal the secret of the heaven and earth; discern the ways of the world, conquer the dead and the living. So it is said about Yin Yang Eyes, but this is it?] Ye Xiao sighed. He was so speechless and he nearly wanted to kill himself. [What a

bloody joke. I am so doomed...]

[One eye sees the ghosts, and the other sees through women's clothes...] He sighed. [I thought it was some marvelous martial art... I was so excited about it for a long time... Now I am excited, but in a way that I don't want...]

[If it was just allowing me to see through the girls' clothes, that is fine. It showed men's naked body to me as well...] Ye Xiao wanted to puke. He felt a bit dizzy. [My god. I am not going to do such a disgusting thing!]

[No wonder I would tear for such a long time when I accepted this martial art. That was a warning of this...] He felt that he couldn't have any tears now even if he cried.

[That was reasonable to cry. It was a foresight indeed...]

He sighed.

He dismissed the Yin Yang Eyes and felt so bored.

[A giant man showed up for such a bloody stupid martial art...

Was it a stunt or something?

Why do I have to be through this.

[The first grade is to see through the secrets of the world... The key of Yin Yang Eye is to...] Ye Xiao reviewed the martial art again. If he couldn't find anything useful about it, he would just leave it.

He didn't like to see a girl's body through her clothes. He would prefer to see a girl naked directly.

Taking advantage of a girl without being noticed, that was something he wouldn't allow himself to do.

The shame in his heart was the barrier in his mind!

[... First step, to see through the exterior protection...] This made Ye Xiao feel right.

Wasn't exterior protection supposed to be... clothes?

Clothes was an exterior protection on people's body!

[... Second step of the first grade, to see deeper through the nature...]

Ye Xiao was lost. He couldn't understand what this nature meant.

What should be deeper?

However, he had made up his mind now.

He would go on cultivating this martial art. Maybe he would need it someday.

However, if he could still only see through people's clothes when he finished the first step...

He would just put it away!

He would seal it!

[I, Ye Xiao, no matter in which of my lives, will never need such martial art that only allows me to peep on women's body!

Men should have principle!]

He made up his mind and then started to check his body and his cultivation progress. As he expected, he should have been benefited greatly after converting all those cold qi. He just didn't know how much it was!

He checked on himself, and he was surprised. He exclaimed even though he was a calm and steady man.

“My god. What is happening?”

Chapter 320: A Huge Progress On Cultivation

Since the beginning, the cold qi he experienced most recently was the densest. As such, he had expected that the burst of cold qi this time would benefit him greatly after he had converted them all.

He just didn't expect it to be such a huge benefit.

It was like a gold brick falling from the sky and he owned it all! A safe fortune!

His Jing and Mai were changed a little bit. There seemed to be no difference before, but the Jing and Mai became a bit darker than before.

The change of color might not be considered anything serious, however, Ye Xiao knew that it was of some special change!

He focused on figuring out the reason for the change and he was surprised. The color became darker because there was a narrow stream of purple line in it. It seemed to be impalpable, but there it was.

Ye Xiao knew that it must be related to the East-rising Purple Qi. He tried operating the spiritual qi. He had just activated his spiritual mind, but the spiritual qi in his dantian had already suddenly rushed up. It was three times faster than before to fill all the place that was suitable for cultivation.

It acted while he thought it!

Ye Xiao was surprised and happy about that.

Generally, only Spirit Origin Stage cultivator could do that. Was he already in Spirit Origin Stage now?

He checked on it and was disappointed.

He was still in the third level of the Sky Origin Stage. He had improved a lot though. He was nearly breaking to the fourth level.

It would take him a hell lot of time to reach the top level of the Sky Origin Stage, not to mention Spirit Origin Stage.

After his Jing and Mai were improved, they became more flexible. It allowed him to move faster. It made him strike three times faster than before so that he could more efficiently defend from the enemies.

In fact, he had no other improvements except this so far...

Ye Xiao was happy but disappointed as well.

If Ye Xiao told anybody else about how he was feeling now, every cultivator in the world would spit on him. [You actually think it is not fast enough for you? How fast do you want? I am going to spit

you to hell, greedy bastard

It takes you only an afternoon to break through a level!

We all need to spend lots of time fixing our Jing and Mai after breaking through a new level. Yours are fine and they actually became even flexible...

Your mind state upgraded too!

Now you are the one who complains about it...

You are... You are such a prick!]

He had actually received a new martial art that many other people would dream of...

He himself didn't know it, but Yin Yang Eyes was a martial art that was considered priceless, marvelous and unique in other people's eyes!

Such a great thing, Ye Xiao actually treated it like nothing important. He would put it away at any time...

It was always a difficult thing to compare two people!

[I should probably think deeper about what this Yin Yang Eyes

could do. It shouldn't be so limited as it is such mystical martial art...]

At dinner, Ye Xiao held the chopsticks in one hand while the bowl in another. He just stared at the air...

Song Jue and Bing-Er looked at him with strange looks. They were shocked by the weird situation on Ye Xiao.

They watched Ye Xiao pick up a piece of meat... with bones! He picked it up and put it to his mouth. He bit it and bit it again... His eyes were profound... In fact, he was in a daze...

- Creak! Creak! Creak... -

The meat with bones were chewed into pieces and he swallowed it all. His eyes were still the same. He just picked up another piece of meat, put it into the mouth... - Creak! Creak! Creak... -

Song Jue and Bing-Er were both stunned. They didn't know what to say.

Song Jue felt scared. A sense of cold raised on his back.

"I mean... Xiao Xiao, why do you eat like this? Do you really like to swallow the whole piece of meat with bones in it? I know you are not weak anymore, you are a superior cultivator, but... you don't have to show us your strength in this way. Are you showing off here?" Song Jue asked.

Ye Xiao raised his head and said, “Ah?”

Song Jue was annoyed. “What do you mean ‘ah’? Can’t you just finish eating before you go on thinking? It wouldn’t take long to have dinner, would it?”

Ye Xiao said, “Urh.”

Song Jue was annoyed, “Are you going to change or not? Do you hear me?”

Ye Xiao said, “Hmm. That’s right. Correct!”

Song Jue rolled up his eyes and sighed.

Bing-Er couldn’t help laughing behind her hand.

The uncle and the nephew, one was annoyed, while another was in a daze. The answers never really answered the questions! That was donkeys’ lips don’t match horses’ jaws!

Bing-Er looked even gorgeous when she smiled.

Song Jue nearly couldn’t look away from her. He hurriedly looked aside and said in mind, [Forgive me...]

At this moment, Ye Xiao suddenly put down his chopsticks. He looked extremely serious and he said in a deep voice, “There is one thing I cannot think through.”

Song Jue and Bing-Er asked, “What is it? Go on. Let us help you!”

Ye Xiao frowned and said, “Look. If a guy suddenly has a special skill... He can see something that others cannot... What should he use such skill for?”

Since he couldn’t think of any good answers, he decided to ask for others’ opinions. Maybe it would give him an enlightenment!

Song Jue was disdainful. “Bullsh*t! How is that some special skill. That is just some kid who got their saint eyes activated, so he sees some ghosty thing... Do you really think it is worth a discussion? As the kid grows up, he would lose it. It is nothing serious...”

“It is a common thing in the world though... Normal people may think he is occupied by devil. They may not know what to do about it, but, for cultivators... It is nothing serious really,” Song Jue disdainfully spoke.

He was showing pride and the attitude of “you are just an ignorant kid”. [The older, the wiser.]

Ye Xiao was speechless, [If it really is just a kid’s thing, do you really think I would be troubled?]

“Well, what if someone can use such a skill?” It wasn’t Ye Xiao’s question this time. It was from Bing-Er.

...

Chapter 321: Fearful For Ghosts!

“Where do you think you can use it for?” Song Jue was disdainful. He said, “It is just a special phenomenon. It has no particular use. I think the most useful part of it is to scare oneself. It would be rather difficult to scare others. There is barely any cultivator that could be scared by this.”

Song Jue laughed. “Which cultivator doesn’t rise from mountains of dead bodies? Which cultivator hasn’t live through life and death? Who would care about such a stupid thing?”

Ye Xiao wanted to argue, but he didn’t know how to. When he saw those ghosts, he was scared for real. He knew cultivators would never believe something that they had never really seen, since they were all brave and confident. He knew the truth, but he couldn’t argue for it.

“You. You surely won’t be scared by that!” Song Jue’s eyes lit up, and suddenly, he shouted loudly, “AH...! GHOST!!”

And then his face was full of disdain. “I think this would describe how one is scared, right? Were you scared? I take it as a no?”

“AHHH...” Bing-Er exclaimed, “GHOST...!!” She trembled as her chopsticks fell to the floor. She was quivering with her face turning pale...

That shout from Song Jue was scary after all.

Even Ye Xiao had goosebumps hearing it, let alone a girl who was only mentally twelve years old. He wasn't scared by ghost. Of course, he was scared by the shout of Song Jue itself.

That was even worse than ghosts.

Bing-Er got into Ye Xiao's arms and she was still trembling. Ye Xiao held her trembling body and looked at Song Jue with anger. "Uncle Song, the ghost didn't scare anybody. The way you shouted did..."

Song Jue turned a green face, "Cough... My bad. I forgot she is just a little girl. Sorry, girl. I didn't mean to scare you..."

Bing-Er kept her head on Ye Xiao's chest and nodded to show understanding. She didn't let go of Ye Xiao though. She was still holding him. Apparently, she was still scared.

Song Jue seemed to be embarrassed, so he coughed. He tried to find a topic to go on, "In fact, ghosts are just some dead people. We don't fear them when they were alive. We will chop them in pieces if they dare to mess with us. Since they are dead, what do we fear them for?"

While he was speaking, he became assured and bold like he held justice. "Girl, you have been cultivating with your Brother Xiao for some days. I heard that you improved a lot. Why are you still so timid. I truly don't understand what you are afraid of..."

Bing-Er said, trembling with a pale face, “I... I am afraid... of ghosts the most...”

Ye Xiao felt disappointed, but he still confidently said, “Truth proves me right. It does have potentials. The way to use it should be improved. That is all. Everything is useful. We just need to find out how!”

Song Jue humphed. “Useful how? It is only allowing people to see ghosts. How is that useful? Can you capture those ghosts for further use?... Ah. Xiao Xiao, why are you asking these questions? Look how you argued for it. You don’t have such a skill, do you? Maybe, you actually are able to... see those things?”

Bing-Er exclaimed again. She looked at Ye Xiao with a scared look. She wouldn’t dare to get close to Ye Xiao if he told her that he could truly see the ghosts.

Ye Xiao was speechless. He knew if he told them the truth, they might leave him, so he said in a deep voice, “Uncle Song, you are making a nonsensical guess. How can I have that skill? Besides, you watch me grow up. How come you don’t know I have such skill if I really do? You said it only happens on kids yourself. Am I a kid to you?”

Song Jue felt relieved. “That is reasonable. I know you don’t have that sharp eyes. Maybe you could if time went back a dozen years ago...”

Bing-Er felt relieved to hear what Song Jue just said. She kept tapping her chest.

“I am saying that I feel such skill may be useful. It may not be totally useless...” Ye Xiao said. Suddenly, he was enlightened. He realized something Song Jue just said might be useful.

“What did you say, Uncle Song?” Ye Xiao hurriedly asked.

“Ah? What?” Song Jue kept his eyes opened widely.

“I said, what did you say?” Ye Xiao asked again.

“What did I say? I said I know you don’t have such sharp eyes! Is that it?” Song Jue asked. He was not sure.

“No. Before that.” Ye Xiao was anxious.

“Ah? What did I say before that? Let me see...” Song Jue was frustrated. “What did I say exactly?”

Ye Xiao stomped. He wished he could tear out Song Jue’s brain to help him think.

Bing-Er raised her head from Ye Xiao’s chest and fearfully said, “Hmmm... Uncle Song said, ‘It is only allowing people to see ghosts. How is that useful? Can you capture those ghosts for further use?’ ... Is this it?”

“Correct! That is it! There it is!” Ye Xiao was delighted and he laughed. He held Bing-Er’s face and kissed on her cheek heavily. What a pretty face. He was so happy. He said, laughing, “My Bing-Er is the smart one. That is it! That is what you said!”

Bing-Er was kissed all of a sudden. She felt her heart stop beating, and she looked terribly embarrassed. She shouted gently and then hid her face on Ye Xiao’s chest.

“Obscene!” Song Jue disdainfully spoke, “You actually took advantage of her... Hmmm. Why is it so special though?”

“You actually did it in front of an old man. Men are not what they were in the times of long ago. What a moral degeneration!”

Song Jue murmured and got up in an attempt to leave. “Fine. I have had enough food for dinner. I should leave... Even if I am not full, I have had enough for such disgust. I might throw up if I stay here longer. Foods are hard-earned. I better save some...”

Then he just disappeared.

Ye Xiao twisted his lips. [Since when did Uncle Song, who has a full mouth of dirty words, tell me to behave. What is that ‘Foods are hard-earned’ stuff? What?] He wanted to explain though, but he decided not to after thinking about it.

He could never explain it well after all!

Holding Bing-Er's soft body, Ye Xiao was thinking, [Instead of discussing with Uncle Song about such things, I should probably discuss with Bing-Er... He was acting weird, and he gave me no practical suggestions. If he tells me more about those moralistic things, I will throw up, not him...]

...

Chapter 322: A Very Important Skill!

“Bing-Er, maybe it is also a good idea to discuss this with you...”
Ye Xiao said.

“... About what?” Bing-Er murmured. She was being shy and couldn’t come back to herself yet.

“Do you think that there is anyway we can make those ghosts work for me?” Ye Xiao asked.

“AH...” Bing-Er exclaimed again and crawled into Ye Xiao’s arms, trembling. “Brother Xiao, don’t talk about this kind of thing, please. Not that word. Please...”

Her pretty face became pale again...

Ye Xiao was amused. [Turns out she is fearful about this...]

He felt happy and bore it in mind.

[Humph. I need to say this here. What happened here has a great effect to Ye Xiao’s future... Ahem... something...]

“Okay, Brother Xiao will stop.” Ye Xiao rolled his eyes. “Lets talk about something else then.”

Bing-Er’s face was full of fear. She slowly looked up and said,

“What?”

She was afraid that Ye Xiao would talk about ghostly things again. She was preparing to hide her face at anytime.

Ye Xiao laughed and said, “Bing-Er, if you have a skill... that allows you to...”

He intentionally stopped.

Bing-Er’s face turned pale and her eyes were full of nervousness. She kept looking away and then she didn’t even dare to look in the air around her. She felt like she truly had that capability to see ghosts...

She thought Ye Xiao was going to talk about ghosts again.

Ye Xiao knew he succeeded in this prank, so he laughed. He said, “Alright. If you can see through the clothes on people... What would it benefit you?”

Bing-Er was just calm. She finally felt relieved since the topic was changed, “To see through people’s clothes. What would that scene be. Let me see...”

While murmuring, she frowned and was lost in thoughts.

“Generally, if you can see through one’s clothes, you can see

something on him... Maybe money? Or maybe something valuable? Maybe some hidden weapons? Everything that is hidden on him. That is one way that may benefit me...”

While Bing-Er was talking and thinking, Ye Xiao was enlightened and his eyes lit up.

[The girl is pure minded. She truly has rather different thoughts from me. What she thinks of is truly useful. Unlike me... I kept thinking about something raunchy... or dirty...]

“What else?” Ye Xiao tried to lead her to more answers.

“What else could be seen except these?” Bing-Er kept rolling her pretty eyes. She said, “If I can see through one’s clothes, I can see through something else too... Like gauze curtain. It is thinner than clothes. There is more... I wonder if I can see through the walls? Walls are definitely thicker than clothes. It must be difficult to see through it. Maybe it won’t work. What if I can also see through walls? Is there anything thicker than walls? The earth? Can I see the things under the ground? Maybe not...”

Bing-Er wasn’t very confident about what she was saying, but Ye Xiao’s eyes lit up more and more.

Hearing Bing-Er, Ye Xiao suddenly felt that his Yin Yang Eyes martial art was dramatically practical.

It wasn’t a surprise that Ye Xiao couldn’t think of many of these.

What happened to him was... When he first used the Yin Yang Eyes, he saw Bing-Er's naked body. It was such a pretty, delicate and attractive body that led a man to imaginations.

That was stuck in his head. That was why he would be focusing on “body” and “clothes” all the time... Ahem. This is a common illness of men. Virgin or not, every man has it.

That is normal.

It is always good to be understanding!

Now, Ye Xiao had thought it over. Suddenly, he came up with further practical situations. [If Bing-Er's conjecture is true. Maybe I can see the hidden weapons on others. I can avoid stealth attacks... Then this is some great skill...”

When he thought about hidden weapons, he thought about the knives and needles that was hidden all over him. He felt it scary.

Since he could hide such kind of weapons, his enemy also could. He might be a true superior cultivator after two lives' cultivation, but he was not one of the greatest cultivator after all!

He wasn't invincible yet.

He imagined how his enemies were embarrassed when they met him, who was like a hedgehog.

He wondered when he met somebody just like himself...

How would he be?

He would definitely panic. That was sure.

If he met an enemy that was even stronger, stranger, trickier than him, what then?

Could he escape it unscathed?

Even though he had a high opinion of himself, he couldn't guarantee it!

However, what if his enemies knew about all the stuff on him in advance? What if they knew how he would use them?

Ye Xiao felt cold and thrilled while thinking about that.

Because if that was real, it couldn't be easier for his enemies to get him killed!

To find out a set-up or a trap, that was the most important thing that concerned about his life!

He could imagine how big an advantage it was if he could see it in

advance!

Ye Xiao showed a serious face and he nodded.

[It seems this Yin Yang Eyes is rather useful. It will be a waste not to go on with it... As I accepted it, I got the first level power.

It seemed easy to cultivate.]

He blinked and said, “Bing-Er, please go on.”

“As for other aspects...” Bing-Er hesitantly spoke, “I don’t know where the limit of such skill stands. But if we go for it, I wonder if it allows me to see through human body? If we see skin as special clothes on us... It makes sense. If it allows me to see through human body... Where the wound is; where there is illness; where... These can be seen by just a look. Well surely, if this skill really is that powerful. I think not. Can it really be that marvelous?”

Ye Xiao was shocked!

[That’s great!

Bing-Er is right. That can’t be more right!

This skill is described as ‘to see through the secret of the world’, then it must be able to allow me to see through human body. It is to allow me to ‘see things that mortals cannot see, and watch

things that mortals cannot watch'. That totally makes sense!]

If it was real, this skill must be very important to him!

It was so important that it made Ye Xiao's heart leap up.

...

Chapter 323: Lord Lan Escaped by a Crafty Scheme!

Thinking about the hidden wound that wasn't fully cured in Song Jue and the hidden wound that hadn't shown effect in his father, Ye Nantian, thinking about the this dangerous martial world that was full of tricks, thinking about all the blood and death he might have to face in the future...

This spectacularly marvelous skill was good enough for everybody to dream about.

Ye Xiao was lucky to have it, yet he had nearly made a huge mistake by putting it away. That was how he had his view of the important overshadowed by the trivial!

Ye Xiao took a deep breath. He operated the Yang Eye and looked at Bing-Er's body.

After feeling an itchiness that he was familiar with in his eyes, a gorgeous naked body showed up in his sight...

- Puff! -

Ye Xiao was trying his best not to let the blood rush out from his nose. He kept looking at Bing-Er's breasts... He was trying to see through the skin.

As expected, his view was getting deeper...

After a while, he saw a flashing mass of red. Apparently, he had seen through the skin and watched the blood flowing...

It was what Ye Xiao expected, so he was more concentrated on the Yang Eye. He wanted to do more. He wanted to learn the mystery of human body. However, he couldn't see deeper than this.

He took a deep breath in and stopped the Yin Yang Eyes slowly. He thought, [My Yin Yang Eyes is in an initial level, so I can only see this deep. Maybe I am still too weak for that. I guess I will be able to see through the entire human body as long as I focus on cultivation for a while.]

[When that day comes, the hidden wound in Uncle Song or the one in my father, all painful illness will be cured with the help of my Yang Eye. In the future, a fight in the battle or a combat in the war, this skill will help me a lot.]

So he thought, his eyes became brighter. He was more and more thrilled.

As his point of view changed, he felt that this skill that he had been disdainful with was actually some super powerful technique!

After all, he was the only person who had such a fantastic skill in the world, even in the universe!

Nobody knew about it.

He could use this skill to conquer every land! He would take all advantages.

As he thought about these, he couldn't help laughing.

He was laughing in a wretched way though...

At this moment, he suddenly thought about someday, maybe he would meet his Lian Lian again...

[Ahem...

I can't think about it further.]

He was going to bleed in the nose again.

A man should never be always thinking about dirty stuff! It was wrong to even imagine!

At the moment, Bing-Er was looking at her Brother Xiao with concerns. She didn't know why Ye Xiao was lost in thoughts and smiled like a fool again. She was worried and she thought, [Why is he smiling so... weirdly. It feels like... flirting... It makes me blush and embarrassed, but I kind of like it...]

...

After that, Ye Xiao spent one whole day to cultivate the Yin Yang Eyes at home. He thought that since he had learnt the greatness of this skill, he should take time to cultivate it as soon as possible. The earlier he improved it, the more benefit he would get from it!

Thus, he stayed at home for four and a half days in total.

It was the most peaceful time since Ye Xiao was reborn!

However, he didn't know, during the four and half a days, many things had happened.

...

After Lan Langlang got the dan beads from Feng Monarch, the night of the same day, he gathered three hundred guards to disguise themselves and leave for the south battle fast at night.

Apparently, he wanted to deliver the dan beads to his father as soon as he could.

When he returned to his house that afternoon, he told everybody, "In three days, I will find some good men to send the dan beads to my father."

But when the night fell, he didn't even look for anybody. He just picked some guys in the house and left, leaving the "three days" behind.

That was a nice scheme. [When I am looking for stronger men, my enemy will look for stronger men against me too. No matter when I leave, there is danger ahead of me! I should better leave sooner than later.

I shall prepare nothing.

Go straight away!

Speed is too important in war!

When people think that I will be leaving in three days, I will be on half my way already!]

Lan Langlang was playing some bravo schemes.

Wenren Chuchu was planning to catch up with them and kill them in the first day. However, she had been with Bing Xinyue all the time. She thought it must be improper to do official business when she was with Bing Xinyue. Besides, she thought that he would have to gather more good men to guard such precious treasures...

It was such an important task after all. No one dared to be reckless on this.

However, Lan Langlang did. He just did something unexpected.

When Wenren Chuchu sent somebody to watch the South General's House the next day, Lan Langlang had been three hundred miles far away. When Wenren Chuchu's men made sure Lord Lan was truly gone, it was already the fourth day!

At that time, Lan Langlang was already three thousand miles away from the capital. Wenren Chuchu wanted to do it easily, but she just couldn't anymore.

Even if she sent a letter to get people to stop him, it would still be too late.

Wenren Chuchu was furious about this.

She scolded those spies that she had sent to the South General's House, "What the hell do you think you are doing? A man is gone with hundreds of people. You spent three freaking days to figure it out! You are simply a bunch of pigs! That is insulting pigs, to be honest! You are worse than pigs!"

The spies all showed green faces. They just kept their head low while listening to her. In their hearts, they knew they were wronged.

[That foppish guy did say that he would find some good men to send the dan beads. He said it was a safe plan. The House of Lan

has been recruiting men during the three days. It looks like they are preparing. How can we know it is a scheme?]

When things were clear to everybody, it was too late for Wenren Chuchu's side.

Who knew that a foppish young lord from the "three lords in town" had such a scheme and determination?

He actually played such scheme in such excellent way! That was admirable!

When Zuo Wuji heard about it, he was quiet for a while. He said, "Prompt decision makes him a man of great value; resolute moves show the sharpness of him; a bold plan makes him a decisive man; thousands miles doesn't negate his fortitude. Lan Langlang... is not that Lan Langlang in old days anymore! He is a man of potential to do great things now!"

...

Chapter 324: More Chaotic!

Besides things around Lan Langlang, there were other waves in the capital.

The auction was finished. Hundreds of supreme dan beads were sold. Those forces didn't all leave town right away. They all stayed in the city.

Nobody expected that to happen.

The reason was simple though. The hundreds of dan beads were all bought. After the auction, everybody knew who got how many dan beads.

When they were outside the salesroom, they got rid of the control of the House of the Chaotic Storms. Those who failed to get the dan beads wanted to get some, those who had some wanted more, and those who got a lot were afraid to be robbed. They were all taking moves for their own profits.

Some powerful ones had started to rob. When they found somebody left the city with supreme dan beads, they followed them, killed them and got what they wanted!

Under such a terrible situation, those who were weak but had bought the dan beads didn't dare to leave. How could they?

In such a stalemate, the clans and the sects all sent their good

men to the city to support their men!

Surely, they said they were coming to make the payment to Ling-Bao Hall. How could they not send as many people as they could to protect what they were delivering. It was simply an excuse. They used such an excuse to send lots of their superior cultivators to the capital. They aimed for different things. Some of them were here to guard the supreme dan beads that they were taking home. Some of them were here to rob. Even some of them had both purposes!

All in all, the capital didn't return to peace just because the auction ended. In fact, it was getting more chaotic.

Endless superior cultivators getting into the city...

Everybody was ostensibly fine with each other. The city seemed to be in peace, but in fact, waves never stopped.

The two great sects were the more aggressive ones.

They got nothing from the auction, and they only got humiliated by Master Bai. They were ashamed. They even got kicked out of the auction, yet they didn't leave the city.

They were staying in the city and now there were more cultivators getting over...

What were the great sects doing in the city? Everybody with a clear mind knew it.

The House of the Chaotic Storms could surely humiliate them, but it didn't mean that they were soft and weak.

In fact, for ordinary people in the martial world, they were still in a high position!

They were the great sects after all!

They still had overwhelming power!

Everybody was worried about the current situation.

Nobody dared to leave.

There were different kinds of people in the city; they were all restraining each other. Nobody dared to take a reckless move. The situation was in a weird balance.

Everybody knew that it wouldn't last long.

When the balance was broken, smell of blood would fill the air.

The king of the Kingdom of Chen got over 70 billion incomes. He felt no financial pressure anymore. The royal treasury had never been more enriched. He could afford fifty more years of war now.

The king was so happy that when he received the money. He picked up the brush pen himself to write the plaque for Ling-Bao Hall. It said “The Best Hall In Chen”.

It made Wan Zheng-Hao shout “long live the king”. Everybody in the Ling-Bao Hall was happy.

In fact, he was doing it only to show respect to the king. Ling-Bao Hall might not be able to defeat the Sunlight Sect or the Starlight Sect, but they were powerful enough to deal with the Kingdom of Chen. If it wasn't for Ye Xiao's connection, Wan Zhenghao wouldn't think much about the praise from the royal family. He might just be polite to them and that was all.

Ling-Bao Hall had many branches all over the Land of Han-Yang. They had branch in each country. Generally, they should be an independent association that showed no loyalty to any kingdom. They were simply merchants. This time, they pleased the Kingdom of Chen, but at the same time, offended all other kingdoms. In fact, they lost more than they had gained!

They might lose even more than money. If Ling-Bao Hall could only stand in the Kingdom of Chen, they would eventually lose all their influence. If the king of the kingdom wanted more money from Ling-Bao Hall and tried to merger Ling-Bao Hall, he only needed to find whatever an excuse to take Ling-Bao Hall down. Ling-Bao Hall would collapse!

Now they were safe though. Ling-Bao Hall and the Kingdom of Chen were in a perfect relationship at the moment. They wouldn't suddenly become enemies. Ling-Bao Hall's great wealth and their

relationship with the House of the Chaotic Storms were more than enough to suppress all other forces. Besides, Ye Xiao was the hidden key of a special relation between Ling-Bao Hall and Kingdom of Chen. It was impossible for them to turn against each other!

The king got the easy money. Officials were getting good pay. People in the military departments all felt proud and confident. They were preparing to spend the money.

They wanted food, horses, arrows and bows, weapons, clothes, salary for soldiers, everything they might need to use...

Everybody in the country, including those soldiers in the battles, heard the news and felt jubilant.

The situation of the war was getting better now as the kingdom had a lot of money to support its soldiers. Soldiers wouldn't have to just hide behind the trenches, always defending.

In the north, Ye Nantian hadn't shown up in sights of the enemies since he returned to the battle. He was waiting for an opportunity to fight back and destroy the enemy once and for all. However, there was a heavy rain earlier which made the grassland drown.

The army of the Grassland Wolf couldn't make any attack at all.

It seemed to them that even though they Ye Nantian was not in

the battle, they still couldn't attack. The King Hu Lun of the Grassland Wolf could do nothing but only sigh. What a waste!

He just felt it a great pity.

He didn't know that if it wasn't for the rain, his army would have all died, since Ye Nantian was hiding somewhere and planning to wipe them up.

The Wolf King sighed. He didn't know the rain had saved his army.

They wouldn't die so soon at least...

...

Chapter 325: Full of Assassins

Compared to the Wolf King, Ye Nantian was even more depressed...

That had been such a great opportunity for him to set the Grassland Wolf up. He could have destroyed them all and made the north land return to peace for dozens of years.

The unexpected heavy rain suddenly extended the war in the north!

It wouldn't make any difference for just Ye Nantian's battle, however, the kingdom was surrounded by enemies and the kingdom expected him to defeat the Grassland Wolf quickly and go to support other battles!

Luckily, the rainstorm wasn't just in the north. In the west and the east, Kingdom of Chen was in absolute inferior position. The armies were in danger. Because of the rainstorm, it delayed the enemies attack plan. The flood ruined many of the camps of both sides.

In such a terrible situation, both sides were forced to make a ceasefire. They were all looking for the troops that were missing because of the flood. It turned into a truce period. That was extremely rare.

The commanders of the enemies were both furious. They were so angry, however, they could do nothing about the nature's disaster.

Kingdom of Chen luckily got a chance to take a breath.

[Such a good opportunity! It just went away?]

Zhan Qianshan, the No. 1 military god in the Kingdom of Tianyu was nearly ill because of it.

It was just... so annoying.

A great victory had been so close to him. It was just right in front of him, however, a rainstorm showed up like there was suddenly a huge hole in the sky...

[Is the god blessing the Kingdom of Chen?!]

When the rainstorm stopped and the battle returned to a usual situation, a horrible news got to him. The Kingdom of Chen suddenly got over 70 billion military expenditure!

[Seventy... billion?!]

Such a good news thrilled up the entire army of the Kingdom of Chen. The soldiers were so excited and encouraged. They could even face and fight against a dragon if they had to!

Facing such an army, the enemy should better just avoid direct fights. If they forcibly started a fight, they would have to be the

one who lost more soldiers for sure.

The worst situation for the enemy was that they could have been crushed down all at once if they were careless!

They wouldn't want to take that risk.

Thus, the enemies in both the east and west started their defensive strategy instead of seeking fights all the time like they had been doing!

As for the south battle...

It was an extremely balanced situation!

Both sides were in peace!

They didn't have place to start a fight at all.

The four battles were all stuck in a weird situation, no matter for what reason.

For all the enemies of the Kingdom of Chen, it was a worrying situation!

They were anxious like hell.

The reason was simple. They fought in four directions, so it would be better for them to finish the war sooner. Things would get worse for them as time passed. The Kingdom of Chen was trying to make the war into a protracted war. That was their only hope to win the war. Now that the Kingdom of Chen got a 70 billion funding, it was like a mountain crashing down on the enemies. The battles had changed. The enemies were feeling depressed now. They knew they would never be able to win now as the Kingdom of Chen could hold on for an unbelievably long time!

They were short in financial conditions!

All the enemies started to hate the Ling-Bao Hall!

[Freaking hell!

What is it to you a small salesroom? It is the war between nations and the alternation of different generations! How dare you put your hand into the world's affair? You really are going to have some real trouble!

You have caused such troubles for us already!

You deserve death!]

The hunting lists of those kingdoms were added several names permanently!

Feng Zhiling was surely the first one!

Wan Zhenghao was the second!

Ling-Bao Hall knew that they wouldn't be welcomed anymore in other countries, so they had secretly ended the businesses in other countries. The branches were still there, but they were just empty places. Thus, even if those kingdoms wanted to mess with Ling-Bao Hall, they just didn't have a way to.

The branches were fine because those kingdoms wouldn't destroy any empty places. To let the branches stay would show their generousness after all!

Ling-Bao Hall, the powerful association that was marked with the name of Kingdom of Chen, stayed still around the Land of Han-Yang. It was a marvelous scene!

Those kingdoms didn't do anything about Ling-Bao Hall's branches, but they did try to deal with the ones who were in charge of Ling-Bao Hall. Countless assassins were sent from different kingdoms. They were all dressed in disguise and went to Chen-Xing City!

Those kingdoms had placed large prices for Feng Zhiling and Wan Zhenghao's heads! They were determined to get them killed!

The total amount of the prices was a world shocking number!

"No matter what it takes, we have to kill those two bastards!"

The prince of the Kingdom of Lanfeng, the war god Wenren Jianyin angrily shouted, “Smash their bodies! Wipe out their clans!”

“Even their death couldn’t set my heart in relief!” Zhan Qianshan gritted with his teeth and said, “Whatever price it takes, I will see them dead!”

Many of the nobility in the Kingdom of Tianyu and Kingdom of Lanfeng hated Ling-Bao Hall!

“Offer a reward to take their lives!”

“Offer a long-lasting reward for their heads! I won’t stop unless they die!”

What a horrible bounty post!

Both kingdoms had post the rewards. All the nobility of the two kingdoms took part in it!

They all wanted to give their money.

That reward statement meant no matter who killed Feng Zhiling, all the reward would go to him alone!

Under the drive of the terribly huge bounty, all the assassins in the world gathered to the Chen-Xing City like flies that smelled

sh*t!

...

Chapter 326: Can't Bear It Anymore!

All in all, a lot of people suddenly rushed into the Kingdom of Chen. There were a lot more hurrying on the way...

The city had become a huge powder barrel!

There might be a time when somebody made a spark in the city, and the entire city would be blown up to the sky!

Under such circumstances, the king became anxious after just a short time of happiness.

Although the king stayed in the royal house, he still felt unsafe deeply, as there were so many superior cultivators from all over the Land of Han-Yang inside the kingdom.

[What the hell is this.]

Every night before he went to bed, he touched his head and neck. [Am I still alive?] The next day when he got up, he took a deep breath. [A brand new day. Hell yeah, I am still alive!]

Who knew what a torture it was to a king!

Even though he was a man with broad mind and a man who had experienced battles and was skillful in fighting, he still felt anxious and depressed facing such a dangerous situation. He was worried,

anxious, and frowning all day long.

[Since when a king has to be so cautious? What the hell is this all about?]

“This is such a historically weird stuff!” The king fiercely cursed, “I should be a terribly special king in the history! I really want to screw everything up!”

...

Ling-Bao Hall received a lot of resources from all those forces during the days. They were earning huge a lot!

As the biggest salesroom in the Land of Han-Yang, Ling-Bao Hall had a rarely large storage for sure.

Especially after Feng Monarch cleared it up earlier, it had a capacity of a huge lot of things.

However, even so, within four days, the storage was filled up quickly!

Feng Monarch had taken away those Space Rings when he left last time.

What was unluckier was that Feng Monarch had disappeared for days. Things arrived but Wan Zhenghao couldn't find any space to

put them. He was anxious. Those that were delivered later could only be placed in the yard outside the storage.

Whoever saw this were stunned.

[That is amazing! So many precious resources are placed there. So many treasures that the noble clans and big sects collected for years are just place outdoor. What is this about?!

That is the one who has wealth speaks louder than others!

That is showing off!]

Wan Zhenghao was wronged. [I am not showing off. Come on. There is no room in the storage. I have to do it this way!]

People didn't buy it. They didn't believe him. [Oh fxxk it. If this is not showing off, what you are saying now must be!]

Wan Zhenghao was upset.

Luckily... it was nearly finished.

The last strongpoint of those families and sects was that they kept their promises.

At the beginning, Wan Zhenghao just felt worried. [Why is Feng

Monarch not here?]

And then Wan Zhenghao just cried!

He finally realized something. This time in this auction, he actually had put himself into a hornet's nest!

That was such a terrible hornet's nest. It was totally beyond the limitation of Wan Zhenghao could bear... thousands of times!

When he heard what people were talking about, he cried. He cried out loud immediately. Tears came out like spring water.

"I don't think I can go on with this life anymore..." he cried out loud.

An over 500 kilograms man sat on the floor stretching two legs clapping the floor crying. Who had seen such a scene?

Liu Changjun was going to comfort him with a few words, something like "everything is going to be fine... I am here with you...".

However, when he got in the door and saw a huge pile of meat crying, goosebumps formed on his skin. He couldn't say a word and just left right away.

[What the hell!

That is gross!

Even if things go beyond our control, it would be no worse than death we have to face. You have lived thousands of years. Do you really have to do this?

It is our own place! What the fxxk do you fear for?

Even if we have to die, you will be the last one!]

Liu Changjun was disdainful about it, so he just ignored it!

[Cry?

Go ahead! Just cry to the end of your life!

I wonder how your tears saves your life!]

...

During this time, the native forces in the Chen-Xing City couldn't even dare to make sounds loudly. They were like wives that had done something wrong to their husbands. They just didn't want to recklessly get involved into some disasters. Even those young people from the royal house, those princes, didn't dare to go out a lot. They were so cautious and didn't do anything that could be wrong.

They had thought of “recruiting some martial forces”, but now such an idea was completely gone like a fart disappearing in a typhoon.

They all knew what things were. They knew it was inordinate ambitions, so they didn't bring it up anymore.

Those who gave them such advices all got reproached. “What the fxxk. What kind of suggestion you are proposing to us. It is pushing me to death...”

Not all the young men from the court were acting cautiously. Zuo Wuji became vibrant somehow.

He hung around with Chen Zhi nearly everyday.

He was just a young lord of an official's family. He wasn't that noted anyway. Nobody really cared about what he was doing. Zuo Wuji took the opportunity to sort out all the things he had heard, seen and learned during the time...

He analyzed everything and gradually got to know how this world outside this kingdom was running.

Chen Zhi had brighten his sight too.

...

During the few days, Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu were also looking for Feng Zhiling.

Wenren Chuchu surely wanted Feng Zhiling to cure her master, so she could have time to return to the Kingdom of Lanfeng quickly. She wanted to do something for her country and her family during the last period of time she had in the Land of Han-Yang...

However, after the auction, Feng Zhiling was gone. Nobody knew where he was. He seemed to have vanished in the world. There was completely no sign of him. No one could contact him anymore.

...

Chapter 327: I See You!

Wenren Chuchu could only grit with her teeth when she knew no one could find Feng Zhiling. [Feng Zhiling, you have time to waste for sure, but I don't!] What Ling-Bao Hall did had turned the situation of the war. Things became worse for the enemies of the Kingdom of Chen. Kingdom of Lanfeng was exactly one of those enemies. Wenren Chuchu was the princess of the Kingdom of Lanfeng. She was so worried and she truly didn't have time to waste now!

Bing Xinyue was quite calm. She was steady and quiet, although she too wanted Feng Monarch to show up again in front of her.

Bing Xinyue clearly knew that the reason why she wanted so... was not the disease of her!

...

Every force was taking moves. Everybody was cautious.

A strange thing was that the House of the Chaotic Storms, who had declared that they would stir up the waves of the world, actually had been silent for days. They had done nothing at all.

They didn't even care about the war.

They even recalled their men outside.

It was really a confusing move. Nobody knew what Master Bai was trying to do.

For thousands of years, it was told generation to generation that once the House of the Chaotic Storms started to stir the Land of Han-Yang, they would just do it fast and destroy the target quickly! They always did!

This time, the target was apparently the Kingdom of Chen. Kingdom of Chen had fallen into four sides surrounding. However, one after another unexpected thing happened, and even the House of the Chaotic Storms disappeared!

What did that mean?

Who could made Master Bai, the House of the Chaotic Storms, make such a decision?

The leaves of the bamboo forest were blown, and it was like waves on the sea.

Master Bai was calm. He sat on the wheelchair like he always did. He stared at the bamboo forest. There was a smile on his face, and it seemed nothing was troubling him.

He didn't say a word. It felt like he had become a part of the bamboo forest and the mountains.

He integrated himself with the nature, and he breathed together

with the sun and the moon!

He stopped thinking about the world affairs. Even the Heavenly Mystery didn't show up in his mind.

He was like a hidden sage who had seen through all secrets of life. He just admired the beautiful scene of the bamboo forest in front of him and praised the blessing from the nature.

A levitating figure came over stepping on the leaves of the bamboo forest. She saw Master Bai was enjoying the view, so she didn't want to bother him. She just quietly stood by his side without saying anything. She enjoyed the view with him.

It was just a short time, yet their minds had become in a perfect conjunction.

It breezed to the bamboo forest and made sounds. The sounds of the leaves made them feel incredibly in peace.

After a long while, Master Bai started to laugh gently. He said, "Wan-Er, your mind state has improved. I am happy about it."

It was exactly Wan of the Clouds standing there. She softly answered, "It was a good luck. Thanks to Master Bai. You told me to step forward on the day of the auction. My mind state was messed a bit at that moment. That martial world spirit returned to me for a moment... and because of that, my mind state improved unexpectedly."

Master Bai smiled blandly and said, “That is right. It is because the temporary change of your personality gives you the opportunity. Actually, Wan-Er, you should know that you are too soft. Because you are too gentle and kind, there is some sense of weakness in you. Living in the martial world, you shouldn’t be weak. You cannot even look weak. That sense of weakness on you may be a good thing for normal women, but it shouldn’t be in you.”

“It doesn’t suit Lady Wan-Er in the House of the Chaotic Storm!”

Wan-Er answered, “Hmm.”

“So, you have to change. However, you naturally don’t like fighting. You hate violence and blood. Every time when you are reborn with me, you need to start over. Although you just need a special moment to finish changing, it is still against the nature.”

“It is against your free will.”

“So you are not happy about it.”

“So you never really change your nature.”

Master Bai took a breath out. He looked gentle. “Personally, I really like the softness of you. The toughness of a hero and the softness of a beauty are a perfect pair. It feels like a beautiful wife serving her scholar husband at night. It feels so good.”

“I like that feeling.”

“If I can recover to my perfect condition, there will be no one who can defeat me. When that day comes, of course you can just be a soft and gentle beaut, and I will just enjoy it.”

“But... not now.”

Master Bai held her hands gently and said, “You and me, neither of us want you to make such a change. However, I have to let you do it because of this special situation.”

Wan-Er felt warmth in her heart. She leaned on Master Bai’s chest and said with happiness, “Please, Master... I don’t feel even a bit grievance. I will make any change for you. I am more than satisfied to stay with you. I have nothing else to dream of...”

“Don’t worry, Master. For your great plan, I will make whatever change that it requires me to.”

Master Bai reached out a hand to hold her waist. “I see you.”

He paused and continued, “You see me too.”

Wan-Er’s tears came out fast. She spoke with quivering voice, “Master...” She suddenly turned to him face to face and desperately kissed on his lips...

They stepped apart after a long while.

Master Bai's pretty face that had always been calm showed up red. It made him look more handsome and cute. Looking at the scene in front, he said, "Wan-Er, look. My favorite plant is bamboo. The thing I love to do the most is to see the bamboo leaves falling and flying in the air... through the wind, the rain, the fog, the snow..."

"I would like to hold a glass of wine and look at the bamboo forest when it is snowing. I would like to hold a cup of tea and listen to the sound of the bamboo forest in the summer... Those are the most pleasant days for me."

...

Chapter 328: You Killed More!

Wan-Er leaned on him softly. Her eyes were blurred with infatuation as her face blushed. She just listened to him quietly.

“Every time when I see these bamboos, I am thinking, the creation of the universe is truly incredibly unbelievable!”

Master Bai blandly spoke, “Look. The bamboos all look the same. Every one of them is showing the same gesture. But if you look closer, every one of them has a different beauty.”

“Every single leaf of them has its own life and its own charm. They are all the same in appearance, but they are at the same time completely different.”

“It seems every bamboo and every leaf has its own life.”

Master Bai took a bamboo branch in hand while he was speaking. The bamboo branch was so green.

“Every time when I see this, I will think, how amazing it is the nature’s creation. How many leaves are there in front of us? How many leaves are there in the world? Not a single leaf that is entirely the same with another. How does the creator create such a mount of different leaves? Maybe that is the extreme power of the sky and earth!”

Master Bai was slowly talking while Wan-Er was quietly

listening.

There was some extremely bright color that showed up in her eyes gradually. She looked at the bamboo forest in front of her. She could surely tell the difference between every two leaves. Her eyes were getting brighter and brighter. Some special feeling turned up from her heart and rapidly filled her up.

“This bamboo forest makes me think... In this land, or under this firmament, how many different plants are there like the bamboos? Every kind is different. Every single one is different. They all have their own unique feature.”

While Master Bai was speaking, his eyes were profound.

“And then it makes me think of people.”

“People!”

Master Bai emphasized the word.

“People, in the world, under the firmament, how many are they? Every one of them is different. Everything in a person is different. No one has similar life with others.”

Master Bai fondly said, “Are they not like the bamboo leaves? Every bamboo could be a city, or even a country... even a land.”

“It is just like human.”

“Every autumn comes, every spring comes, leaves fall, and even those that are always green will fall when the new leaves come out in spring. The new leaves pushed the old away to the ground!”

“It is just like the alternation of generations.”

“It is helpless and imperative.”

Master Bai looked at the bamboo forest and spoke in deep sorrow, “Although I have suffered the divine punishment because of what I did, deep in my heart, I know that I don’t care about it at all.”

“We are like the bamboo forest. We are like the leaves. It is so full of vigor and lives. What if this happens...”

Master Bai threw out the bamboo branch.

He didn’t really throw it hard.

The branch fall to the bamboo forest.

- Swished... -

One after another, a mass of leaves fell to the floor.

The floor was covered by the fallen leaves.

The bamboo forest was shaking when the wind blew over. The sound of leaves falling came out. There were countless leaves falling down.

Master Bai quietly looked at it and then asked, “Among the leaves that fall to the ground, are there more naturally falling leaves than the leaves I hit down to fall? Or is it the other way around?”

He seemed to ask himself, but at the same time, he also seemed to be asking Wan-Er. In fact, he might be asking the gods.

Wan-Er looked at it and answered, “Maybe the wind blew down more.”

Suddenly, she trembled.

She finally understood what Master Bai was trying to say now.

Master Bai curled his lips smiling and said, “That is right. It is the wind that blows more leaves down.”

He raised his head and looked to the sky; he gently spoke, “It is you. You killed the most!”

His voice was calm, but there was a sense of hate inside his voice!

It was a sunny sky.

After Master Bai said it, suddenly, a thunder struck down!

The sudden thunder seemed like making a crack in the sky!

It was a loud thunder!

A thunder in a sunny sky. That was real!

A white sharp lightning struck down from the sky. Everybody in the land saw this lightning at this moment!

Everybody, strong or weak, with good eyes or not, was looking at the sky!

The thunder shook the entire land.

The lightning flashed and then disappeared right away.

The sun was still shining in the sky. What a sunny day.

It was like nothing that had ever happened!

Inside the bamboo forest, Master Bai looked at the deep ditch in

front of him on the ground.

It was a crack!

It was so deep that nobody knew how deep it was. It was long.

Cracks covered the ground like roots of trees.

It was a horrible and weird scene!

Master Bai was calm and he looked at it. He didn't change his facial expression. Several streams of hair fell down from his forehead and covered his eyes. He gently spoke again, "You killed more!"

Unlike Master Bai, Wan-Er was shocked and her face turned pale. She nearly sat on the floor because of fear.

[To fight against the gods?!]

There were sweats on her forehead.

Master Bai took a breath out. His eyes turned bright. He started to sneer. "The hatred in my heart, the disaster I have suffered, the nine divine punishments on me, for thousands of years, I am just expressing my feelings, yet you actually struck a thunder on me?"

“What should I do to vent my hate? Should I kill the entire world?!”

Master Bai started laughing.

He said, “Fine. It is nothing but emotional catharsis... I have finally vented the hate in me that haunted me for thousands of years!”

“I am comforted! I feel right about everything!”

“If I want the sky, the sun and the moon, I will also have the stars. If I want chaotic storms, the world will collapse. If I want the mighty throne in the universe, then I shall stir up more waves for it!”

...

Chapter 329: Seven Days?

He turned to Wan-Er and said, “Is Xiu-Er back?”

Wan-Er was still immersed in happiness, so she replied a bit later, “She’s on her way.”

“Hmm.” Master Bai looked straight forward as his fingers kept stretching and relaxing several times. He asked again in a gentle voice, “How is everything going in the Chen-Xing City?”

“Peaceful.” Wan-Er said, “However, it is the calm before storms.”

“Hmm. Kept suppressing it. The heavier the better,” Master Bai said.

“Yes. I will go to the two great sects tonight and humiliate them more,” Wan-Er calmly spoke.

“That’s right. Let the two great sects go mad. They would never be bold enough to come and fight us head on... However, we can’t suppress them too much,” Master Bai spoke slowly, “They might die for it.”

“Yes. Wan-Er know.” Wan-Er nodded.

“When they are suppressed into the extreme... When they are so close to death due to it... Xiu-Er should be back then.”

Master Bai's eyes looked more and more steady. "When she's back, you two together should go lit up the whole supression into explosion."

Wan-Er nodded and said, "Yes. When Xiu-Er is back, we will make a great opening. We won't let you down."

Master Bai smiled. "I trust you. For all these years, you two have never let me down."

He raised his head and looked into the distance, like he could see the fires in the battles. There was disdain in his eyes as he blandly spoke, "There are more than one way to collapse the world."

"When Feng Zhiling came to me for help, I did want his help too. It is hard to tell who is the one that gets help!" Master Bai blandly smiled as his eyes turned extremely sharp. "He couldn't fight against the two great sects, so I helped him, and I seized the opportunity to gather all those men in the city! When all those superior cultivators are here, how could such a small city hold the mess among these people?"

He smiled and spoke in a low voice. He seemed sneering. He talked like it was just something normal—he was looking down upon the entire world. He smiled. "Supreme Dan? Oh what a stunt. Heh, heh..."

...

She didn't understand why her master wanted Xiu-Er back. Now she knew that he had foreseen what was happening now when Feng Zhiling asked them for help.

In fact, Master Bai humiliated the two great sects to lead it to the present situation.

Now that everything was following his plan, nothing was unexpected for him.

None of those forces dared to take any reckless moves. None of them dared to leave the Chen-Xing City.

Whoever wanted to leave safely would have to gather their entire clan or sect to protect the supreme dan beads. That was exactly what Master Bai wanted!

While there were enough superior cultivators, what was going to happen in the city... would be able to shock the world!

When that happened, even the guarding forces of the three kingdoms together couldn't fight against the power of all the superior cultivators of the land together, not to mention the capital of the Kingdom of Chen!

He was sure about it!

What Ling-Bao Hall had done pissed all the hostile forces in the world. They all sent their best men to the city!

They were going to add more fuel to this fire!

No one could imagine what it would be like when the disturbance took place.

It must be really terrifying!

Looking at Master Bai smile and talk leisurely, she thought... maybe he was the only one who could foresee the disturbance to come!

“Seven days!” Master Bai calmly spoke.

...

It was in the House of Ye.

Ye Xiao finished the last round of cultivation as he felt that the energy of the East-rising Purple Qi in his body was about to erupt; it was running without stopping. The Yin Yang Eyes was also improving. It wasn't such a huge improvement, but it was a big one.

Ye Xiao started to stop when he thought that the treasures that those clans and sects owned Ling-Bao Hall should all be delivered.

He thought maybe he should go get them.

Thinking about all those treasures that might pile up like mountains, his eyes became the shape of a gold mountain!

It should be a great gain!

That was no doubt!

Beside him, Bing-Er sat cross-legged. She closed her eyes and her face looked casual.

Ye Xiao looked at her with jealousy.

[Doesn't she have a great physical condition? How long has it been? Now her wound is cured, and... the martial art I taught him just a month ago... She is now so skillful!

She is in the third level of the Human Origin Stage now!

That is an extreme speed for a girl who has never learnt anything about martial art!

For any sects, such a person should be a dream disciple!]

Ye Xiao sighed. [With such great potential, she has grown up so old. Those sects are like blind...

Well, thanks for their blindness, I met her!

This is a pie from the sky. It is not only falling to me, it falls into my mouth perfectly!

And I swallow it well!

Yummy!

That feels so good!]

Looking at how hard Bing-Er was working on cultivation, Ye Xiao thought, [I am going to make Bing-Er a great woman who will be endowed with both civil and martial virtues!]

[Make her the only faery in the universe!]

[Poetry, calligraphy and painting, the theories of great men, the civil and military skills, the marvelous martial arts...]

[Ahem... There must be such a versatile person in this world!]

Ye Xiao was confident.

He then quietly walked out.

He had to go to Ling-Bao Hall for those treasures, and he also needed to solve Bing Xinyue's health problem.

Besides... now he was greatly improved with the Yin Yang Eyes... The Mu Clan had been hostile to him all the time, so he figured it was time to take care of them once and for all.

The entire Mu Clan was in the capital now...

As for the Crown Prince's Palace and Guan Zhengwen...

Ye Xiao was thinking maybe he should go get them too.

...

Chapter 330: Lord Xiao Came Out

Ye Xiao felt something really strange the moment he walked out of the door.

On the street in front of the House of Ye, he felt a lot of spiritual minds filling the air. He had just walked about a dozen steps, yet he felt like like waves were rolling and crossing on the street.

For ordinary people, it was no different than any normal street. For cultivators, the depression and the feeling of being peeped on made every cultivator who walked across there feel scary and nervous, like his enemy was getting close to him!

As he walked closer to the Ling-Bao Hall, the feeling got stronger.

After walking for a while, he had to stop.

He was stunned there, thinking.

[How come? Ling-Bao Hall actually became a focal spot. Why?]

Ye Xiao thought that since the auction was over, everybody should pay attention to those who had gained the supreme dan beads. Ling-Bao Hall had sold out all that people wanted the most, so it should become a blank area in people's sights.

Besides, during the auction, the House of the Chaotic Storms,

Wan of the Clouds, and even Master Bai were showing positive attitude to Ling-Bao Hall. Nobody should still be watching Ling-Bao Hall!

Ye Xiao was confused. Suddenly, he was enlightened, and then he frowned. It seemed he figured out something.

He walked forward faster.

He made several turns and then came out from somewhere dark. When he came out, he was no longer Lord Ye. He was Feng Monarch now. He kept walking casually and then made several turns again and then disappeared.

There was a small shop.

It was a tailor's shop.

It seemed the shop was getting through a tough time. There was only a silver-haired old guy with almost blind eyes sitting at the door waiting for customers.

There would be some women coming for it occasionally. The shop couldn't make much money, but the old man seemed rather satisfied about the present situation. As such an old man, he wouldn't ask for more but only food to feed himself and bed to shelter himself...

Nobody knew that there was a secret room inside this small

tailor's shop.

Feng Monarch was quietly sitting inside that room with a cup of tea in his hand. He was frowning.

Suddenly, steady rhythmical sounds of knocking sounded under the floor.

Ye Xiao lightly stomped somewhere on the floor with his foot, and suddenly, a hole showed up on the floor, with Liu Changjun suddenly getting up from it.

“My lord.” Liu Changjun got down on one knee and saluted to Ye Xiao.

Not like how he dealt with Wan Zhenghao, he treated Ye Xiao with extreme respect.

Since Ye Xiao recruited Liu Changjun and taught him something he needed, he became greatly improved, learning many kinds of secret martial arts in the process. He was far stronger than he used to be, even though he was still in the same cultivation level. The only thing holding him back was that he had cultivated those martial arts for just a short time, but with all that he had learnt recently, he could be one of the best cultivators in the Land of Han-Yang now.

Other than that, Liu Changjun had become the head of Ye Xiao's under strappers. All the assassins that had been recruited were

under his command. The power in his hands even made Wan Zhenghao jealous.

Liu Changjun was worthy of Ye Xiao's trust and respect. Every order from Ye Xiao was completed well. He had never hesitate about any missions he had gotten.

In Ye Xiao's mind, Wan Zhenghao was only No. 2 of the most able man he had, and Liu Changjun was No. 1!

"What is going on in the capital? Why are there so many waves? They are all pointing at Ling-Bao Hall! How come!" Ye Xiao asked, frowning.

Liu Changjun wanted to say something, but he didn't. After a while, he said, "The reason was surely the auction this time."

Ye Xiao widely opened his eyes and said, "Hmm? What is it? Details!"

Ye Xiao had been a great cultivator who had marvelous skills, but he wasn't a man with schemes and tricks. Otherwise, he wouldn't end up to be alone all his life.

This was his second life, yet he was still not so improved on that. He had felt something wrong, but he didn't quite see clear of it.

"Thing is..." Liu Changjun said, "The supreme dan beads we sold this time... It is a huge number indeed. This time, the powerful

ones didn't get them all by suppressing others. The dan beads were all sold in a fair way. The supreme dan beads were sold in enormous prices. Many people do not have that much money to get lots of the dan beads, and thus, every faction has some dan beads. It should be a good thing that everybody get something, but people are always greedy. The ones who got less than they wanted are trying to have more. Those who got a lot want to keep the dan beads safe, and they still want more. Those who get nothing are seeking other ways to get to the dan beads. They all wish they could get the dan beads by paying nothing..."

Ye Xiao was surprised. "Ah? Is that real?"

People's greediness was surely beyond Ye Xiao's imagination. Those who got nothing wanted to get some, while those who got something wanted to get more. For Ye Xiao, although supreme dan beads had exorbitant prices, they were still dan beads; it wasn't that special for him. For others, however, it was something they couldn't have enough. They would always want more, let alone those who hadn't get anything!

Liu Changjun sighed. "Besides, the two great sects failed to get even a single dan bead this time. A lot of supreme dan beads have shown up this time, so it will surely draw a lot of superior cultivators to come. As time passes, the positions of the great sects may be challenged, so they surely don't want to leave the city. Since the two great sects won't leave the city, none of the others dare to leave. Everybody knows that if any of them stepped out of the city, they will be caught up and killed. None of them can be confident about escaping the strikes from the two great sects. They wouldn't have a chance to escape indeed."

“What they can do now is to wait for their people to come. When their families or sects come, they will be strengthened. When that happens, even if anybody wants to catch them and kill them, it will harm both sides. That will make the great sect hesitate about it and make a cautious decision.”

“By the way, there is people saying that the Boundless Saint of the Boundless Lake has come to the Chen-Xing City. He didn’t show up in the auction though. If it is true, he must be waiting for something... What he is waiting, what he wants, is clearly the same thing that the two great sects want.”

...

Chapter 331: A Valuable Head

“Moreover, the auction in Ling-Bao Hall this time has created a legend in the history of auctions. We earned the favor from the king of the Kingdom of Chen, however, the 70 billion that we gave the Kingdom of Chen has caused some long and serious impacts. The three kingdoms in the Land of Han-Yang are at war. What we did was to show the world that we had chosen to stand by the side of Kingdom of Chen. The 70 billion pissed off the other two kingdoms seriously. They are both furious about it, so the assassins from those two kingdoms are coming over to end our lives.”

“Furthermore, the reward that the Kingdom of Chen gave us pushed Ling-Bao Hall to the edge of the blade.”

“There were over ten thousand superior cultivators in the martial world that were gathered by the auction in the capital. During these several days, none of them left the city. Now, there are over thirty thousand superior cultivators... It is apparently not the end of it. There will be much more coming over.”

“According to the official intelligence and the analysis of our own intelligence network, there are more than five thousand assassins rushing over from the two other kingdoms. Besides, there are much more cultivators coming for the reward.”

“For the present situation, the Kingdom of Chen is the enemy to all other kingdoms, while Ling-Bao Hall is enemy to everybody in the world. As for you, everybody wants to kill you!”

“Now, the Chen-Xing City has become a powder barrel that is filled with gun powders. It looks peaceful in appearance, but things will get real nasty when it bursts with a fire spark.”

“When I said that everybody wants to kill you, it was not a joke. On the reward list for assassination in the Land of Han-Yang... My lord... You are the No. 1!” Liu Changjun was a bit upset as he continued, “The name of Feng Zhiling corresponds with the Feng Monarch... though we both know it makes no difference. The Kingdom of Lanfeng has put half a billion for the head of Feng monarch! So has the Kingdom of Tianyu! Besides, the royal families of the two kingdoms have both put money in it, and that makes the number greatly increase. The reward for your head is reaching two billion, and the number is going up! Every second, there is a certain amount of money being put on the reward. In simpler words, every assassin wants your head right now...”

Liu Changjun explained everything about the current situation.

Ye Xiao was speechless about it.

[I just want to make some money. Why did it turn into some world war?

How am I supposed to deal with such a messy situation?]

“I never expected my head to be so valuable. I am just trying to be a citizen of the Kingdom of Chen and do some proper donation to my own country. Why is everybody aiming at me...” Ye Xiao rubbed his head and murmured, “That reward, that is a huge

money. Even I want to cut off my head for that money...”

Liu Changjun was stunned, not knowing what to say at all.

If someone else was wanted dead with such a high reward, he would be scared to death. He would at least be nervous and terrified.

However, Liu Changjun found that Feng Monarch was actually a bit happy about it, and he wasn't just acting...

[I wonder how his brain had grown like this. How could he be so indifferent...]

“Two billion... If one of those assassins is lucky enough to have my head, is he really going to get the reward? Can he carry such an amount of money with him? If he can, how is he supposed to spend it...” Ye Xiao spoke in sad voice. He frowned and acted like he was feeling sorry for the one who might have his head.

Liu Changjun was speechless.

“So, I decided to keep my head to myself, so that they won't be bothered by such a problem,” Ye Xiao spoke in a serious tone.

Even though he was saying things indifferently, he was thinking about how to deal with the current situation.

It had become really nasty now.

He really didn't know that the auction he held for making money actually put him and Ling-Bao Hall in such a dangerous situation!

[Hmm. Wait! For the great amount of money as the reward for cutting of my head, all the assassins gathered here aiming at Feng Zhiling. Everybody is afraid that they will be killed if they recklessly leave the city. These are all reasonable things to happen.

But why would those forces pay attention to the Ling-Bao Hall?

That is unreasonable. First of all, Ling-Bao Hall has no other supreme dan beads. There is no valuable target in there. Second, the important one, after the auction, everybody knew that Ling-Bao Hall is well connected with the House of the Chaotic Storms. They should think that we are allies, otherwise, how could Master Bai and Wan of the Clouds be so mean to the two great sects. They were apparently doing it for Ling-Bao Hall. If people still have fear for House of the Chaotic Storms, they shouldn't have locked on Ling-Bao Hall like this!

Unless...]

Ye Xiao was lost in thoughts, and then he suddenly figured something out. He couldn't help but make a bitter smile.

[That bastard Master Bai must have seen this in advance. He intentionally caused this situation. No wonder he promised to help

me so easily. He even forced the two great sects out of the auction on his name.

He let the two great sects gain nothing. Since the two great sects gained nothing, that is the key to all that is currently happening.]

Ye Xiao would rather cut his head off than believe that the House of the Chaotic Storms didn't play any schemes.

He thought that Master Bai must have informed those forces other than the Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect that Ling-Bao Hall and the House of the Chaotic Storms were no allies!

Otherwise, no one would dare to spy on Ling-Bao Hall like this!

“He really is a thousand years old fox!”

Ye Xiao had to admit that he was too far below Master Bai's league on playing schemes. Five of him wouldn't be as good as that thousand years old schemer.

Who could solve such a terrible situation right now then?

Who could give Ye Xiao any ideas about how to solve it all?

Ye Xiao was thinking about it.

“Wan Zhenghao is nervous like hell these days. He may break down at any second... There is a 300 million reward on his head! Wan is sighing all day... It is too much a pressure on him indeed,” Liu Changjun said.

Ye Xiao coughed and said, “A crisis can sometimes also be an opportunity. After this, Wan will absolutely lose weight. It may be a great thing for him!”

...

Chapter 332: All Solved In One Night

Liu Changjun found it both funny and annoying. He said, “I can’t believe you have such a good mood to make jokes right now. The situation is most dangerous for us. What is your decision?”

Ye Xiao stood up; he casually paced for several steps and said, “What decision can I make? We defend the attack like we make a bank to keep the flood out. Liu Changjun!”

“Yes!”

Liu Changjun answered, chest out. He was solemn and not nervous at all.

“When I said a crisis may also be an opportunity, I was not joking. Maybe it is our opportunity this time.” Ye Xiao spoke with a serious face, “You have been worrying about how we are short for assassins, haven’t you? Now there is a great opportunity in front of us. All the top assassins will be here in this city—everyone of them. Is it not a gathering of resources for you?”

Liu Changjun found it funny. [If it is that easy to recruit those top assassins, the world would be much more enjoyable for us.

Those outlaws, they think more of benefits than friendship and loyalty; they love to kill; they are crazy for money. They have different kinds of personalities. How could they become my men while they are trying to take my life?]

“There are only things that you cannot think of, but nothing that you can not achieve.”

Ye Xiao blandly spoke, “Off you go now. Pay attention to all the moves around Ling-Bao Hall. Keep our place safe first. It is our groundwork. As for further tasks, just wait for my order.”

“Yes.”

Ye Xiao was being too confident.

Liu Changjun trusted him most, so he felt relieved and left.

Ye Xiao watched Liu Changjun disappear in the hole of the floor before the hole itself disappeared. After which, he lost the confidence on his face right away. He didn't say anything for quite a long time, and then he only started to smile bitterly.

[Damn it. Everybody is waiting for my thought. Do I look like a man full of schemes? I wonder where I can find somebody to give me some ideas!]

Ye Xiao was worried and upset. He didn't look so calm and steady anymore.

After a long time, he moved to the door. When he got out of the door, he was not in the appearance of Feng Zhiling.

He would have been assassinated ten times on the street if he showed up as Feng Zhiling!

Only at the moment he reached the entrance of Wenren Chuchu's residence did he change his appearance into Feng Zhiling again.

"Are you okay these days?" Bing Xinyue looked at him and asked with hesitation.

Wenren Chuchu was looking at him too with concerns.

They both were well informed. They knew what was going on in the capital. They knew what would eventually happen, and they knew the pressure on Feng Zhiling must be overwhelming.

"How can I not be? I am all good. Don't you know I have earned a great one?" Ye Xiao smiled like nothing had happened. He was casual. "Let's start on curing the disease, shall we? I will be rather busy for the next few days. I may not have time for you two. Luckily, my cultivation have improved these days, so I may be able to go further in curing the disease. For a long time to come, there will be no reverse impact."

Wenren Chuchu was clever enough to help Ye Xiao with some practical ideas. If she would like to help him, it would be easy to solve the situation. Even if it couldn't be so easily solved, it would be better. Ye Xiao wouldn't be helpless.

However, there was the pride in the Xiao Monarch's heart.

“Since when I, Ye Xiao, would need helps from a woman? Besides, this woman wouldn't be happy to help me. We are in different sides. Why should I force others to do something they don't want to. That is not a noble thing to do!”

Bing Xinyue heard him, but she was trying to avoid eye contact with Ye Xiao.

She and Wenren Chuchu had discussed about it seriously.

Wenren Chuchu was the princess of the Kingdom of Lanfeng after all. She could be a traitor for not stirring disturbance in the Kingdom of Chen, so how could she help Ye Xiao?

In fact, let alone Wenren Chuchu, Bing Xinyue could help him a lot. She was much stronger than any of the strongest cultivators in the Land of Han-Yang. If she backed Ling-Bao Hall up, it would be overwhelming. Ling-Bao Hall would be completely safe; in fact, whoever dared to attack Ling-Bao Hall would be killed instantly. All cultivators in this world meant nothing to her!

However, she couldn't do it. To protect Ling-Bao Hall meant to be against the House of the Chaotic Storms. Bing Xinyue knew what Master Bai represented. If she messed with him, she would get herself killed and also draw disaster to the Misty Cloud Palace!

Besides, it meant she was standing opposite to her own disciple. The more she helped Feng Zhiling, the more people in her disciple's country would die.

It was an unsolvable problem.

However, she was unable to stop herself from helping Feng Zhiling when she herself was accepting a favor from him.

That feeling was hard to bear for her.

...

The whole night, Wenren Chuchu stood under the flower tree in the yard alone. She looked at the sky for a long time as a lot of thoughts bothered her mind.

The dew had soaked her clothes, yet she didn't do anything to avoid it.

Feng Zhiling was in desperate situation; Wenren Chuchu could see it in sight. She knew that it was the House of the Chaotic Storms that pushed everything to the current situation.

In fact, even if she did whatever she could to help Ye Xiao, it wouldn't help.

It was the truth. It was reality!

However, Wenren Chuchu knew that even if there was such a good excuse to not help him, even though nobody could pick any problem in that excuse, excuse was an excuse. Even though nobody would blame her, how could she live with the guilt in her heart!

She might fail if she tried to help, but it was a completely different story if she didn't offer help!

However, she was meant to be enemy to the Kingdom of Chen. She could never help her enemy.

That was a good excuse that could persuade herself!

However, excuse was excuse. It was just a more powerful one. That was all!

It was late at night.

There was only one room in light in the yard.

The light was on for a whole night.

Ye Xiao was trying his best to solve Bing Xinyue's problem in this room.

He had improved two grades now, and his East-rising Purple Qi had reached the second level. It was much easier to solve Bing

Xinyue's problem now, and it worked better than before.

It saved more than five times the time compared to last time!

He would have to operate the martial art dozens of times to clear all the death qi in Bing Xinyue before, but he actually spent only one night to clear eighty percent of it now!

There was only twenty percent remaining inside Bing Xinyue. Even if Ye Xiao died and couldn't continue the process, Bing Xinyue wouldn't have any problem in cultivation for hundreds of years.

When it was dawn, Ye Xiao withdrew his hands, completely exhausted.

...

Chapter 333: Formidable Pride

It had been a whole night.

Ye Xiao didn't have any rest.

When he withdrew his hands from Bing Xinyue's beautiful skin, he felt something special.

He suppressed that strange feeling right away.

He stood up and blandly spoke, "It worked well. We will only need one more time, and it will be completely removed after a half night."

"It is not a good idea to keep going on with it. When it is slower to success, we should be more cautious. Any tiny mistake could lead to a reverse impact. That is extremely dangerous. You can just try to get used to your current situation. I will be back in two days." Ye Xiao smiled blandly and then walked to the door.

He had just made two steps before he suddenly felt dizzy. He nearly fell down on the floor.

It had driven him to his limits to operate the martial art for a whole night.

He had forcibly kept doing it till he had gone over the limitation,

and now, he couldn't hold it anymore.

Ye Xiao shook his head and tried to keep himself steady. He looked at Bing Xinyue and smiled. He said, "I'm a bit numb in my feet."

He sounded so gentle and casual; he wasn't nervous at all.

Bing Xinyue looked at him with complicated emotions. In her eyes, there were special feelings.

[Feng Zhiling has tried to cure me even to the point of risking his life. He has truly done all he could for the night. Now he is so exhausted that he is barely able to stand steady. Why?

This time, the capital is in a huge mess. Things are getting strange and unpredictable, and Feng Monarch is in the middle of the disturbance. Under such circumstances, he cannot be sure about whether he will still be alive tomorrow. Can he?]

And then she realized something, [That is why he tried so hard to remove eighty percent of my illness at one time!

If he is able to, he will deal with the twenty percent in any cost. Apparently, he doesn't have that energy anymore.

He has truly tried his best, and he is now so weak because of it, but he is still explaining to me and trying to relax me. He knows there are countless assassins outside who want to kill him, yet he

still promises that he will come for me in two days.

He has said nothing else at all.

He can ask me for help. In his current circumstances, it is quite a reasonable request. Only when he is alive can I have the chance to survive. He didn't bring such fair request at all.

He didn't even mention a word about it.]

Even though he didn't say anything about it, Bing Xinyue couldn't pretend that she didn't know anything.

However, she knew it, so what? Would she really help him?

Of course, she was able to help him. As long as she took some moves, it wouldn't be too hard to solve it all!

How could she face her disciple then?

Helping Feng Monarch meant helping the Kingdom of Chen.

To help the Kingdom of Chen meant to fight against the Kingdom of Lanfeng. How could she explain it to her disciple?

[Besides, she once told me that the House of the Chaotic Storms is the force that keeps pushing everything to the current situation. If

I do anything to change the situation, I am enemy to the House of the Chaotic Storms. To declare war against Master Bai will lead to my death and eventually bring disaster to the Misty Cloud Palace!

But... How can I live with the guilt if I don't help him?]

Bing Xinyue was lost in thoughts. She didn't say anything for a while; she was utterly confused.

Feng Zhiling had rested for a while. He felt alright now, so he waved his hand to them and then walked to the door. While walking, he said, "I will be back in two days."

[Facing the entire martial world, the two kingdoms, and the two great sects, can you... come back really?]

Bing Xinyue was emotionally struggling with self-contradiction. She suddenly said, "Wait."

Ye Xiao didn't stop; instead, he just said, "I know what you want to say. I know what you want to do. Well, you don't need to. I never ask for any returned favors in my life. Don't look down upon me, and not upon yourself. Farewell."

[I know it is going to be real tough for me.

But I won't beg for any help. I tried so hard to cure you, because I think I may die in this disturbance.

That is why I want to do it for you in advance.

If I don't do it and if I die, Jun Yinglian will lose her best friend.

As for others...

I am a proud man. Since when have I begged for anything?]

Inside his heart, it was the formidable pride.

[I won't accept it even when you offered your help. Me asking you for help? Never!]

When he talked to Bing Xinyue, he was still in the room. When he finished talking with that last word |farewell", he was already in the yard.

Ten meters away it was the door in front of him.

At this moment, he saw somebody.

That was Wenren Chuchu.

It had been just one night since he last met her, but she looked much gaunter now.

She was all soaked by dew, and her clothes were all wet. Her eyes, that had always been sharp, were now dim and fuzzy.

At the moment, she looked up and saw Feng Zhiling. She suddenly trembled. She bit her lip as her eyes were filled with a complicated expression. That was difficult to describe!

Ye Xiao smiled gently and casually said, “See you around...”

He casually waved his hand and then got out of the door.

Behind him, Bing Xinyue, who had chased him out, and Wenren Chuchu were both showing complicated expressions on their faces.

They hadn’t said anything for a long while.

Ye Xiao was gone.

Bing Xinyue stepped forward a bit and then stopped. She was quite frustrated, at least, she looked like so as she said, “This man is an extremely proud man. He would rather die... than ask for help.”

Wenren Chuchu spoke with sorrow, “If he did... would you help him, master? Would I?”

Bing Xinyue was stunned; she said, “Chuchu, you have to understand. Feng Monarch cannot die no matter what!”

Wenren Chuchu's eyes became dim for a while. She looked away and tried to bury the pain inside her heart. She softly said, "Master, your clothes..."

Bing Xinyue was surprised and she looked down on her clothes.

She found her clothes in disorder. She was in a bad mood watching Feng Zhiling leave, so she just followed him out right away and didn't notice anything wrong about herself.

She blushed and then tidied up her clothes. She then said, "No matter what happens, even if the Kingdom of Chen disappears, we have to keep Feng Zhiling alive. The House of the Chaotic Storms only wants to collapse the kingdom. They are not specially aiming at someone. The difference is..."

Wenren Chuchu nodded. She took a breath out and said, "Master, I know what you mean. I think I need to get back to the Kingdom of Lanfeng this afternoon."

Bing Xinyue was surprised and she said, "Hmm?"

Wenren Chuchu bit her own lips. Her face turned pale as she said with a low voice, "I really don't want to face all these things here... I want to escape."

"It may be... the only escape I'll do in my life."

Wenren Chuchu stared at the door with wooden eyes. Actually, there was nothing there anymore.

Maybe she did it because it was where Feng Zhiling left.

...

Chapter 334: Contradictory Mind

Wenren Chuchu looked at the door, feeling utterly disconcerted.

[Maybe he will never come back after stepping out of this door today. Maybe he will even... disappear from this world?]

Thinking about that, she felt sharp pain inside her heart. It was terribly painful.

That extreme pain made her face turn pale as her heart was twitched with cramp. She closed her eyes tight; she didn't want to face everything that was happening on her.

“Escape...” Bing Xinyue was disconcerted too. She murmured, “Escaping... is good.”

Wenren Chuchu kept her eyes closed, then two teardrops fell down on her cheeks.

She knew she could do nothing if she stayed.

[Master seems to have some special feelings... for him. I can see that!]

She said our sect needs him.

I know it is an excuse. She just wants to help him. She just want

him alive.

I can't unmask it!

I don't want to.

But it feels so bad to stay here any longer.

I don't want him dead. I don't want my kingdom to lose the hard-won opportunity either. I don't want to be in the opposite side against him...

I have to leave.

I have to escape to the time when I cannot anymore!

If I leave... on the other hand, it will be a relief to master.

Master will help him. She will...]

Wenren Chuchu sighed. She turned around and looked at Bing Xinyue. "Master, I am leaving."

At this moment, her eyes were filled with complicated expressions.

Facing her disciple's eyes, Bing Xinyue was shocked.

It was her first time to be stared by her beloved disciple with such a complex eye expression.

Under the watch, she felt guilty and nervous of no reason.

She felt like she was a thief.

She felt like she had stolen something from her disciple.

Her lips moved. She wanted to say, “Chuchu, don’t worry. I won’t take anything from you...|

That’s what she was thinking about, for real!

But she didn’t say it out.

If she said it, she admitted it, wouldn’t she?

If she said it, she couldn’t see Feng Zhiling anymore...

Moreover...

She was confused and disconcerted. She didn’t know what to say; she could only stand there while doing nothing.

She didn't even noticed that her disciple had turned and gone.

When she came back to her mind and checked on Wenren Chuchu by spiritual mind, she found that she was packing things up in her room. Wenren Chuchu was sobbing. Was she crying? Or was she trying hard not to?

Bing Xinyue felt pain in heart.

When Wenren Chuchu finished packing and came to her master with an innocent smile to say goodbye, Bing Xinyue could not help saying, "Chuchu, don't worry."

Wenren Chuchu smiled. "What are you talking about, master? What should I worry for?"

Bing Xinyue took in a deep breath. She looked at her disciple's eyes and said, "What belongs to you will be yours. Nobody can take it away!"

The smile on Wenren Chuchu's face was gone. She blushed and then her face turned pale like white paper.

She nodded, "Master, I understand. I am off. Please... take care!"

She turned around and rushed out.

She disappeared from the door within a second.

Only a small sound was left behind her. - Pah. -

It was a drop of tear hitting on the doorsill.

Bing Xinyue looked at the tear on the doorsill. It was tear brought by pain that her disciple left. She could feel the pain and contradiction in her disciple's heart.

[Two kingdoms! Billions of lives! Countless fires and beacon.

You have what you should protect, but I have my responsibility too!

I want to be an ordinary girl who can risk anything for her love, her happiness... But I can't.

Because my name is Wenren.

I am Wenren Chuchu!]

...

Zuo Wuji was standing in front of the widow in the study room. His pretty eyebrows were frowning.

The situation in the capital was in a mess. It was peaceful in

appearance, but under that peace, there were waves. Whoever knew about it were scared, terrified, shocked.

Zuo Wuji was one of them!

“If such a disturbance really happens here, I am afraid... Inside the capital of the Kingdom of Chen, rivers of blood will flow! Terrible scenes will be everywhere!” Zuo Wuji sighed to the sky.

“If the capital breaks down, no matter how strong we are in the four battles, our country will be collapsing.”

He had been hanging around with the little prince these days. It looked like he was having fun, but in fact, when the auction has ended, Zuo Wuji found that things were not right.

After checking for several days, he surprisedly found that even though the kingdom got a lot of money and became safe again, it was actually falling into a crisis that was even more dangerous than before!

Since the auction began, things gathered in the Kingdom of Chen. As the auction was finished, nothing stopped. More and more waves showed up under appearance.

It was like a volcano hidden under the ground of the Chen-Xing City.

Things had become so strange and unpredictable!

An opportunity wasn't an opportunity anymore. In fact, maybe it still was, but the Kingdom of Chen was getting into a much worse situation. However, it appeared that the kingdom had gained a huge amount of money!

Zuo Wuji reckoned that behind all this, there must be a huge hand pushing it into the current situation. Maybe that powerful hand had set up everything. It just used the auction of the Ling-Bao Hall to achieve its plan!

Whoever held that hand was horrible. The really horrible thing about him was that he made everything going on in public. Nobody could stop or escape it—everybody had to do as he wanted. Even though they knew it was a pit of hell, they had to jump in, even if they dug it themselves!

Ling-Bao Hall would have to hold the auction. It was a great plan. They were doing a great thing for the country!

The entire Kingdom of Chen was benefited by this auction!

Kingdom of Chen was weaker than its enemies in the four sides. It had to be a long war if Kingdom of Chen wanted to win. Money was absolutely needed—a huge amount of money.

Materials, food, weapons, horses, medicines... all required money.

Salaries and pensions also required money!

The fire of the war had flaming in the land of the Kingdom of Chen. There needed to be money to comfort the citizens in the country.

...

Chapter 335: About Zuo Wuji

The fire of the war flamed every piece of land in the Kingdom of Chen. None of the cities was able to pay tax to the court for the coming few years, instead, they would have to ask for money from the court...

Everything needed money. Kingdom of Chen needed a lot of money—a huge money!

Where did that money come from?

Would it be from the sky?

Would it?

Impossible things sometimes became possible!

Ling-Bao Hall, whose branches covered the entire Land of Han-Yang, who had never been related to any forces or countries in the world, surprisingly declared that they supported the Kingdom of Chen. Half of their incomes from the auction would be donated to the Kingdom of Chen to fill the royal treasury!

Nobody knew how powerful Ling-Bao Hall was in fights, but everyone knew that Ling-Bao Hall was the wealthiest in the Land of Han-Yang.

Even in a normal auction, half of the income would be a large number. This time, it was an auction for the supreme dan beads!

That must be a enormous number!

As expected, Ling-Bao Hall had made a historically huge amount of money.

The money that they donated to the Kingdom of Chen was 70 billion!

It was truly an unbelievable number!

None of any kingdoms in the world could gather such an amount of money on their own. Even if all the kingdoms sat together to pool the money, they might not be able to make it that much!

Besides, it was all in cash.

Such a great amount of money surely wasn't easy to raise. If Ling-Bao Hall didn't have the supreme dan beads, how could they make this much money so easily!

And there was the House of the Chaotic Storms who helped a lot in this. These were what made a legendary auction in the history!

How could the Kingdom of Chen refuse such a big amount of money?

Absolutely not. Even though they knew it would put them into a dangerous situation, they would still do it. Even if they would die after that, they would still do it!

Such a great wealth brought by the auction, would Ling-Bao Hall let it go?

After so many hard works to prepare, after socializing with different forces, they finally earned that money. Even if they knew it would lead them into a dangerous situation, would they give up?

Absolutely not.

The Kingdom of Chen or Ling-Bao Hall, even if they knew what the consequence would be, they would still do the same thing. Others surely had no reason to give up.

Things were just going as it would go. The current situation was a certain consequence.

The hand that pushed all this was a hand with aboveboard scheme. Even though people knew there was danger, they would still step on it. It was such a marvelous and shocking strategy!

However, no matter how admiring it was, it should be unruly.

The Kingdom of Chen was in a dangerous period of time. As

acitizen of the kingdom, people should do whatever they can to help!

What could solve such a problem anyway?

Zuo Wuji looked out through the window. He deeply sighed. [The man who set all this up has profound thoughts. He knows well about his enemy, and he does things quick and fast. He must be a powerful man. Even if I have ideas to save the kingdom from the current situation, where do I find such power to actualize it? My power is weaker than my thought!]

While he was just being upset, someone came to report, “Lord Ye has come for a visit.”

[Ye Xiao? What does he come for?]

Zuo Wuji thought about it and then his eyes lit up. “Quick! To the study room!”

And then he added, “To my study room.”

After he had shown his capability in the family, he had become quite important in the family. He now had his own study room in the house.

This was the first time he and Ye Xiao got together in his own study room!

Neither of them knew that this was a meeting of a milestone. It was an important event in the history that happened afterwards!

The legend began from this moment!

When Ye Xiao entered the room, he was “frightened” by the study room.

“This... This is a study room?”

Ye Xiao’s eyes were wide opened.

The room was about 33 meters wide, 52 meters deep and 13 meters high!

[It is no way a study room! It is apparently a warehouse!]

Except it was too spacious, it was totally like a study room though. There were lots of bookshelves in the room, and all bookshelves were filled with books. When Ye Xiao just entered the room, he felt like he was drowning in the ocean of books. He couldn’t help feeling dizzy.

All the books were sorted into different categories, tidy and clean. There were lots of papers on the bottom floor of each bookshelf. Those were Zuo Wuji’s notes about what he had read in the bookshelf.

“It used to be a waste warehouse of this house... My grandpa allowed me to have my own study room one day, so I asked for this room.” Zuo Wuji smiled. “Now I feel it is still too small. There surely is no end for learning... I am going to expand it some days later.”

[Such space, such size, you call it small?]

Ye Xiao was speechless. He sat down on a chair and looked around. He found that there were five sets of chairs and tables in the room, other than those bookshelves. They were placed in the shape of a plum flower. He curiously asked, “Zuo Zuo, your study room is really special. There are so many bookshelves and books. That is good, however, there are also lots of chairs and tables. How do you use them all? I think maybe when you become the prime minister in the court, the entire city won’t be spacious enough to be your study room. Holy sh*t.”

Zuo Wuji smiled. He made tea for his guest and blandly smile. “A comfortable place is always helpful in study. The room is spacious. When I want to pick a book, sometimes, I will have to walk for a while. There are chairs and tables all around. That would be much more convenient. When I become the prime minister, there will only be books that I write myself. So when that day comes, maybe my study room will just be even smaller than any one else’s!”

Ye Xiao was surprised, and then he understood.

[I am truly not a man with lots of thoughts. For Zuo Wuji when

that day comes, what does he need to learn from others' books? He must have his own theory!

He surely won't need such a huge study room, or 'study house'.]

...

Chapter 336: Not So Easy

“Have some tea.” Zuo Wuji put a reeky cup of hot tea on the table on Ye Xiao’s side. He casually sat by Ye Xiao’s side, and he was acting casually. Apparently, he felt comfortable being with Ye Xiao. He said, “Since you come to me, it must be for something important, right?”

Ye Xiao looked at this confident and relaxed man in front of him. He was shocked.

When Zuo Wuji stole the Jade Ruyi for money from his own house, he was so embarrassed.

In the old days, he could be scared by just some words from others. Now, he was casual, confident, decent. That was such a huge difference!

It had only been half a year. How could he change so much?

Zuo Wuji was now giving Ye Xiao an impression that he was a bit like Master Bai of the House of the Chaotic Storms. He could actually be another Master Bai really.

“Zuo Zuo, I can see a big change you have made. A man should be seen in a different way after three days. You are this man.” Ye Xiao didn’t talk about anything serious and just sighed.

“I have never changed,” Zuo Wuji calmly spoke, “I was like this

before. I have always been interested with these things. However... I did have some crazy times before. That is all.”

Ye Xiao nodded. “Hmm. You mean you are actually a man with lots of secret deep inside your heart. The reason why you are one of the ‘three lords in town’ is that you act like a prick. The bastard appearance you show people is just your cover...”

Even though Zuo Wuji was profound in thoughts, he was surprised. He turned serious and blandly said, “Xiao Xiao, the stone carving you took away from my house, is it good?”

Ye Xiao laughed out loud. “You bastard. You actually know everything. You have been just playing foolish.”

Zuo Wuji humphed and said, “That thing, my grandpa worked so hard to get it. Since he got it, he had changed a lot of places to put it. He didn’t find a perfect spot for it at the end, so he just hid it... Haha. My grandpa was always lost in thoughts in front of that thing. Since that thing got into our house, every several days, there would be somebody dead...”

“It may be a good thing, of good use, however, no matter how good it is, if there is no proper way to use it, it will only bring danger to the house. Instead of keeping it in the house and bearing the misfortunes in the family, I would like to send it away, so it would stop bothering me. Things could be avoided in my house.” Zuo Wuji smiled. “It is good that you like it. Even if you didn’t want it, I would try to find a way to give it to you as a returned favor... Truth is, that thing works for you. Well, you could just take it. It helped you and also helped myself. What a good thing to

do!”

Ye Xiao was surprised. “One’s only crime was only to carry a jade. The spirit in it isn’t something everybody will agree and accept. Zuo Zuo, you are really a generous man!”

Zuo Wuji smiled like a fox. “Old saying is always right in some ways. In fact, the truth has proven me right after all. Since that thing was gone, no one else died in my house.”

Ye Xiao was enlightened. “I see.”

[It was truly so unbelievably easy to get that thing, so this is why.

I wanted it for sure. Because Zuo Wuji wanted me to have it, I got it in such an easy way.

How could anything just be taken away so easily from the House of Prime Minister Zuo?

Damn it! There are a lot of fools in the world! When I think somebody is a fool, the most foolish one is myself.] Ye Xiao found it both funny and annoying.

Twisting people around the fingers felt good; while to be twisted around somebody’s fingers was annoying!

He thought he was twisting others around his fingers, but in fact

he was the one who was being twisted. That was utterly annoying!

Was there anything more annoying? Absolutely. When the truth was told and the fact was revealed to everybody involved! It was super annoying to find out that he was the most foolish one!

Ye Xiao felt both funny and annoyed!

Zuo Wuji blandly smiled. “Don’t be so upset. You are the one who has benefited the most after all. When that thing belongs to you, it is in good use. I reckon your recent improvement must be its credit!”

Ye Xiao nodded to agree.

The Heavenly Crystal Marrow had the capability to create. It produced the life qi by its own, and it raised everything in the universe. It had spirit itself, so it wouldn’t keep producing life qi without limitation. When it produced life qi, it would also absorb the spiritual energy from the sky and earth. That was its way to keep the world in balance.

Anybody who knew about such good stuff would surely put the Heavenly Crystal Marrow somewhere with dense spiritual qi. It would drive it to produce more life qi, so that it would help the owner cultivate better.

Prime Minister Zuo was of course a discriminating man, yet he didn’t know the truth about the Heavenly Crystal Marrow. He

didn't know how much it meant to a cultivator; in fact, even saints would want it. However, it barely had good influence to ordinary people.

A small Heavenly Crystal Marrow would not be powerful enough to absorb as much spiritual energy as it required. After it produced life qi for a long time, it would be used up and disappear!

The Heavenly Crystal Marrow that Prime Minister Zuo collected was a big one. It produced lots of life qi, yet it would need to absorb lots of spiritual energy as well. The House of the Prime Minister Zuo surely couldn't have so much spiritual energy. People's life was spiritual energy though. That was why people died so frequently in the old days.

Anyway, it was helping others as well as helping themselves! It made both sides happy!

"That thing..." Ye Xiao smiled. Apparently, he was trying to find some proper words to describe the truth.

"You don't need to tell me that..." Zuo Wuji stopped him. He smiled, "It is yours now. It has nothing to do with me. Besides, I got what I earned. That is enough for me!"

He gently looked at Ye Xiao and said, "To be honest, I am so happy that that thing didn't kill you."

Ye Xiao rolled his eyes.

[Bastard...

You truly are full of schemes. However, among those vicious schemes, there was a good one, the one you hold for your friends.]

...

Chapter 337: Martial World Resentment!

No matter how, and no matter what Zuo Wuji had been planning in the past, he and Ye Xiao were now good friends.

Truth about the past didn't matter really.

Maybe Ye Xiao had set Zuo Wuji up earlier, and Zuo Wuji set Ye Xiao up instead. Both sides were to be blamed. It didn't matter how it was before. What mattered is that they were good friends, brothers, now!

"You are not here to just hang around with me, are you?" Zuo Wuji said, "What is it? Cut the roundabout and just tell me."

Ye Xiao humphed and said, "You cunning gawky tricky prick. Why would I come if I don't have anything serious? Today, I am here for the messy situation in the capital. I need a wise man to sort all things out for me. Among all that I know, you are the wisest one, surprisingly. I guess I have to come to you."

Ye Xiao was right.

In the entire Chen-Xing City, there were only two people who could help him with any ideas. One was Wenren Chuchu, while the other was Zuo Wuji.

Even if Wenren Chuchu would like to help, Ye Xiao would not dare to accept. He didn't want to either.

He didn't dare to, because they were in opposite sides.

He didn't want to, because he had a strong pride.

[I am a proud man. I have laughed at all heroic figures in the martial world, so how can I ask for a favor by giving one?]

Zuo Wuji was his only choice.

Ye Xiao didn't made a wrong decision. According to what he learned about Zuo Wuji just now, Zuo Wuji, Lord Zuo, really had such capability.

In fact, he might be even better than Wenren Chuchu in strategies and schemes!

No wonder he was the head of the "three lords in town", who was even above Ye Xiao!

"The situation in the capital..." Zuo Wuji became solemn. He stopped being casual and instead became upset. "Even if I thoroughly think it through, so what? We have limited power. What can we do about it to solve the problem? Maybe a small power could lift a heavy thing, but a small power will still be required. What we are talking here is much more difficult than lifting any heavy things. In fact, we don't even have our small power. What can we do?"

Ye Xiao said, “That is not yours to concern. You just need to sort it out thoroughly and make me a practical strategy for it. The rest will be my task. You don’t need to worry.”

While he was speaking, he sounded so confident and overwhelming.

Zuo Wuji heard him. He looked at Ye Xiao for a while and then took a deep breath out. He said, “Okay!”

Ye Xiao smiled with pleasure.

Zuo Wuji said, “Maybe I am going to make a cloud-built theory now. Maybe it is just whistling jigs to a milestone. Anyways, I am going to drive my brain seriously!”

Ye Xiao was a bit angry and speechless!

[You prick! Why can’t you just say something I would like to hear?

Cloud-built theory? Fine. What do you mean whistling jigs to a milestone? Do you think I wouldn’t know you are calling me dumb?

Hmm. You said it loud and clear in front of me!

What the fxxk...]

Zuo Wuji teased Ye Xiao first, but he didn't let the third one of the 'three lords in town' go. "Lan Langlang, that bastard, what a covert he played. Well planned... Damn it. He got away and escaped the crisis in the capital. Now the whole world is looking at Chen-Xing City. All those men in the martial world... He must have had a safe and happy tour to the battle. That is for sure."

He sighed. "In fact, what he is doing should be full of danger. His life is put in risk. You never can predict the future though. He, such a silly dude, actually made everything. Foolish men sometimes have good fortune."

"Foolish or not, he did play a good scheme this time." Ye Xiao nodded.

Zuo Wuji replied with a "hmm". He stood up and walked to the biggest table among the five. It was in the center of the room. He pulled a hanging rod, and then suddenly put a map got down.

"This is the map of Chen-Xing City," Zuo wuji said, "it was finished last night. I never thought it would be used today so soon. What a luck. I don't know how much use it has though."

Ye Xiao looked closer and found that it still smelled ink.

There were directions, locations, houses names, and the spots of all those martial forces on the map.

“I don’t think I need to tell you what is happening in the city now. We both know it. Anyways, it is serious, and it is indeed terrible,” Zuo Wuji said, “under the peaceful appearance, there are many volcanoes hidden under it that will burst at any second.”

“Look here. It is the area of the royal house.” Zuo Wuji used a narrow white stick to point the center of the map. “Outside the royal house, there are houses of those officials... My house is here. And yours is there...”

“I don’t know if there are any strangers living in your house, but in other officials’ houses, there are all kinds of martial world people staying. Even in my house, there is a group of people...” Zuo Wuji said, “There are seven guys in black living in my house. They act secretly. They come and go without a sign. I don’t know how strong they are, because I don’t have a pair of eyes that are capable to. I can roughly make a guess that they are all Sky Origin Stage cultivators.”

Ye Xiao took a breath and didn’t make a sound.

“They are carrying some strong aura of depression. I don’t think they are of any good kind. I tried to check on their background, but I am not so capable of it. The only useful information is that they were not on the list of people who attended the auction, and it is said that the Boundless Saint has arrived in the Chen-Xing City. He just hasn’t shown up yet...”

“What I have learned about the Boundless Saint is that he feels quite similar to these seven men... I boldly conjecture that they are very likely from the Boundless Lake,” Zuo Wuji spoke in a deep

voice.

Ye Xiao was shocked.

It didn't shock Ye Xiao that Zuo Wu knew about the martial world figures hiding in his house.

What shocked him was that Zuo Wuji was actually able to tell all the forces and sort them out well. He could actually come to a conclusion that the seven men were from the Boundless Lake.

A man who wasn't in the martial world and didn't know how to cultivate had such information about the martial world. It proved that Zuo Wuji had a marvelous brain.

However, what shocked Ye Xiao the most would be something else.

...

Chapter 338: Fine-draw

When Ye Xiao took the Heavenly Crystal Marrow from Zuo Wuji, those men who got to the House of Zuo to make a disturbance were most likely people from the Boundless Lake.

When those men mistook Ye Xiao for Ning Biluo, they said, “Ning Biluo, the Saint would never let you go!”

However, Boundless Lake people settled in the House of Zuo now.

What was the truth behind all? What relations were there between things?

What connection did House of Zuo had with the Boundless Lake?

It wasn't a proper time to try figure this out though.

“In the Crown Prince's Palace, there are Mu Clan people. In the second prince's place, there are people from the Nangong Clan. In the third prince's house, there are people from Gongsun Clan...”

“Each of the three oldest princes is apparently in the opposite side to the other princes. Each of them knows that the other two princes are his threats, since they are all fighting for the crown. So, Mu Clan is not in good terms with the other two clans.”

“The three clans are all inside the Kingdom of Chen. They all

have different interests though. They support different sides. That is obvious.”

Zuo Wuji said, “Nangong Clan and Gongsun Clan cannot be in good terms with each other. That is for sure.”

“The other five clans didn’t reside in any other officials’ houses. They just stay in the hostels... and they have obvious purposes. They don’t want to arouse suspicion. Interesting thing is they stayed in five different hostels at the beginning. The nearest two hostels are several miles away from each other. It seems all those noble clans have problems against each other. They are all with different thoughts.”

“Recently, the five clans all moved into the biggest hostel in the Chen-Xing City, Chen-Xing Hostel, where the Long Clan has been staying. They must have felt the pressure. They know they have to cooperate with each other against outer forces. They are trying to save themselves. Because of their weakness, they don’t want to snatch anything anymore. The only thing they want is safety. They don’t want to be... robbed.”

Zuo Wu talked about his thoughts about the eight noble clans, who were martial clans that had strong connections with different kingdoms!

Ye Xiao’s eyes lit up when he heard it.

“The Cyan Cloud Sect is in the east city. They are staying still, and they don’t seem to be connected to any other sects. They are

steady, however, they are much weaker than the two great sects. Why aren't they afraid then? And, during these days, no superior cultivators from the Cyan Cloud Sect has come to the capital. That is some special move... The only explanation is that they have strong backing."

"I reckon one of the two great sects must be strongly related with Cyan Cloud Sect, that is why they are not afraid."

"They know they would never be robbed. They wouldn't be robbed by the great sects at least. Except the two great sects, they can handle any other forces."

"Green Mountain Sect and Reaching Cloud Hall are staying in the same place. There are not enough hostels for such amount of people now. They rent people's house by paying a lot."

"During these days, they have sent lots of superior cultivators. They seem to feel that they will be the targets for the two great sects, and thus, they gathered as many people as they can to try solve their problem."

"..."

Zuo Wuji talked about every sect, and every family while pointing them on the map with that narrow stick. He talked systematically.

Ye Xiao was absorbedly listening to him and absorbedly

memorizing all.

There were over seventy top powerful forces in the Chen-Xing City. Zuo Wuji talked so well and he was very familiar with them.

“Next. I am going to talk about the Sunlight Sect and the Starlight Sect.” Zuo Wuji took in a deep breath and said, “I have to say that they are truly two shameless sects. The Sunlight Sect is in the east of the city, while the Starlight Sect is in the west. They stay in these two sides, and obviously, they are trying to keep watch on the entire city. They even sent their men to the south and north gates. That is a bold move. Apparently, they are not just here for the dan beads. They want to vent the anger in their chests.”

“What they are aiming at are those martial forces, and especially the Ling-Bao Hall.”

“In their sects, there are master superior cultivators. They are truly stronger than any other sects. However, they don’t have enough money to take all the sects down at one time. Thus, during the days, they have sent people coming too... They are waiting for an opportunity.”

“When they have it, they will go for it. All the other sects will be wiped down.”

At this moment, Ye Xiao finally interrupted him, “The opportunity will be when all the forces leave the Chen-Xing City and on their way home... The great sects can take them down one

by one and take as much as they can.”

“Yes,” Zuo Wuji agreed and said, not only the great sects, but also over seventy other sects know it. That is why no one chose to leave. They are all staying in the city. They are waiting for a change... It is a capital of a kingdom after all. There are protection forces of the king, so the two great sects will not take any reckless actions... All of these leads to the biggest problem for us.”

“If they don’t leave, the two great sects would lose their patience anyway. When they think they have enough manpower, they will do it no matter where it is. The royal protection force is just a limited shield...”

“When they start to do it, it will be the beginning of a great mess.”

Zuo Wuji said, “There is an uncertainty though. That is the people from the Boundless Lake, who have been hidden in my house all these days. It is said that the Boundless Saint is the evilest man in the world! Such a man in the dark will be a threat, like a knife above the head for everyone. Nobody should ignore him.”

“What I said is the current situation about the martial world.” Zuo Wuji took a breath and drank some tea, and then he said, “These are what I can gather and analyze. Those people, they maybe very strong and powerful, but if we use some strategy to alienate them, it will become a much easier task... Surely, no matter what strategy we will use, we need certain power. If we don’t have it, we can just have thoughts. It won’t help if there are only thoughts.”

...

Chapter 339: God Damned Feng Monarch

Ye Xiao took a breath out too and sighed as he murmured, “This bunch of bastards are more than enough to stir the Chen-Xing City up... You said these are the people you know about their connections. Who are those you cannot then?”

Zuo Wuji rolled his eyes and said, groaning, “Those are the real enemies of ours. They are the ones who fish in troubled waters. Ah. It is all Ling-Bao Hall’s fault...”

Ye Xiao coughed. “Uh, why don’t you give me some details.”

“Ling-Bao Hall...” Zuo Wuji spoke like he was having a headache, “I have to say that Feng Monarch of the Ling-Bao Hall has no other strong points except he has a bold heart. He must be either without a brain or a rotted brain. He must be using his knees to think, and his brain is just for decoration, I am afraid...”

Ye Xiao stared at him with his eyes wide opened for a while, and then he took a breath out. “Go on.”

“That asshole, he created such an auction. He actually made a great hornet’s nest on his own and raised it to a huge one. At the end, he broke it himself too...”

Zuo Wuji spoke with hatred, “He has made a huge mess that is bigger than the sky. Most annoying, he actually disappeared after making such a mess to the city... He hasn’t been seen for days. Maybe he has already been killed. He should have been killed

earlier. If he died before the auction, none of this sh*t would happen...”

Ye Xiao looked at the prick who was insulting him right there. He really wanted to throw the cup on his face, but he knew he couldn't, so he didn't do it.

He couldn't expose himself.

“Come on. Can you say anything useful now? What is it really?” Ye Xiao was impatient. “Can you solve the problem by just abusing people? Besides, he has donated 70 billion for our kingdom. Why don't you go solve the financial problem for our kingdom if he didn't do it?”

Zuo Wuji was stunned. He spoke in anger, “What is it? You actually defended that guy. Is this thing relevant to you?”

Ye Xiao angrily spoke, “I said that Feng Zhiling is the hero of our kingdom! I will not allow anybody to insult our great hero!”

Zuo Wuji looked at him for a long time and murmured, “Hmm. I never deny it. He might have done things in the wrong way, but what he has done is admiring. It isn't wrong to call him our hero...”

Ye Xiao said, “Fine. Go on you. Say something serious. Come on.”

Zuo Wuji murmured, “I was talking about someone else after all.

What is wrong with you...”

He cleared his voice and said, “The auction has solved a big problem for our kingdom, however, it brought a huge problem at the same time. It benefits the kingdom for one time, yet put the future in danger for a long time.”

“Ling-Bao Hall offended the two great kingdoms in the world as well as our enemies in the south and north. The 70 billion money disrupted their plans. Over three billion people in the world hate Feng Zhiling in the Land of Han-Yang! ...”

“Three... billion!” Ye Xiao shivered.

[Damn! I didn’t think of it when the auction was on. There are actually so many people cursing me?!

Oh my god!]

“Now, different forces from all kingdoms all wanted Feng Zhiling’s head. They all put a bounty for it. That is reasonable though. Feng Zhiling’s miserable situation is because of nothing but his own fault.” Zuo Wuji sighed.

“What? Come on, Zuo Zuo. Isn’t it too over to talk about a hero like that!” Ye Xiao was annoyed.

“Xiao Xiao, why do you care about him so much? Why do you keep defending him?” Zuo Wuji seemed to find out something

interesting!

He looked at Ye Xiao with a smile on his face. Deep in his eyes, there were profound thoughts.

“I am not precisely defending him. I just think that after a man has done so much for our country, it is not right to question his good will for benefiting our kingdom. I don’t think you should slander him like that!” Ye Xiao seriously said.

“I am not slandering him. It is my impersonal view!” Zuo Wuji said.

“What the hell. What more do you want to speak ill of him if what you said isn’t slandering him? Feng Zhiling is on our side after all. Do you really have to talk about him like that?” Ye Xiao wasn’t so happy right now.

“Xiao Xiao, we are talking about the whole vision of the situation here. What we are doing requires us to be absolutely objective. You cannot bring your personal emotion into it. I have my reasons to get the conclusion about Feng Zhiling, but you, you’re just being emotional. Do you know Feng Zhiling well?” Zuo Wuji said.

“Hmm? Me? We... No... Not at all... Not anymore...” Ye Xiao became incoherent!

“Forget it. I don’t care whether you two know each other or not. Now he is missing. Even if you want, you can’t possibly bring him

to me right now anyway... Let me tell you what exactly Ling-Bao Hall is facing right now, and then you will understand why I have that conclusion about Feng Zhiling!”

“Okau. I am listening!”

“Ling-Bao Hall has branches all over the world. It is famous for not standing any side among the kingdoms. Because it has been aloof to all kingdoms, it has survived for thousands of years. It is an extremely powerful organization, and it never picked a side when two kingdoms are on war. That is the reason why it can stay strong in the history!

However, Feng Zhiling has broken the rule this time. He declared that they supported the Kingdom of Chen. What he did has offended most people. He did benefit the Ling-Bao Hall for now, but in the future, there is full of danger for Ling-Bao Hall. I can be sure that if no other forces assist Ling-Bao Hall, this salesroom, which has been existing for centuries, will fall soon. It will disappear!” Zuo Wuji said seriously.

“I don’t think it is so severe, is it? I think Feng Zhiling is quite an experienced and capable man. Ling-Bao Hall shouldn’t be so weak though. Besides, even though Ling-Bao Hall doesn’t have branches in other kingdoms anymore, it can always stay in the Kingdom of Chen. Don’t tell me the Kingdom of Chen is planning against Ling-Bao Hall too?!” Ye Xiao said, “Would they be biting the hands that feed them?”

...

Chapter 340: Know Nothing About Politics

Zuo Wuji sighed, “Xiao Xiao, you really know nothing about politics in the country. While Ling-Bao Hall is trying to benefit the kingdom, the kingdom is surely grateful for it. However, when Ling-Bao Hall can no more benefit the kingdom, and CAN even become a burden to the kingdom, the kingdom will kick it out without hesitation. No matter how capable Feng Zhiling is, I can be sure about another thing, Feng Zhiling can be the Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall for not long. Wan Zhenghao has thousands years experience. He would never do such a stupid thing!” Zuo Wuji said.

Ye Xiao opened his mouth but said nothing. What Zuo Wuji said was all true. He couldn't deny it!

“Alright now. Let's go on with the current situation. The number of assassins from different kingdoms is huge. It is hard to sort them into different kinds. However, there is something we can divide them for. Generally, there are over five thousand assassins that are on records in the Chen-Xing City right now! However, they disappeared as soon as they entered the city...”

“In other words, there are more than five thousand assassins hidden in the city.”

“Besides, they are all here for official orders,” Zuo Wuji said, “more scarily, there are assassin associations from the martial world and those freelance assassins...These people are well hidden. Nobody knows about their background, but there is one thing I can be sure about: the number of people entering the city through the city gates is twice as much as usual!”

“Don’t be surprised though. Not yet. The real astonishing thing is coming. That is the number of people entering the city. The number of people leaving the city is the same as usual. That means there are more than a hundred thousand people who entered the city and didn’t leave. What are they here for? Who are they? We know the answer.

“Many of them are here for Ling-Bao Hall, Feng Zhiling, and Wan Zhenghao for sure, but not all of them are locking on Ling-Bao Hall and its people. It is the capital of the Kingdom of Chen after all. I believe many people would come here for the royal house. Actually, they may be aiming at the entire city!”

“Hmm. I understand what you said. Reasonable enough. However, do you really have no idea how to deal with these people? Or what do you need to deal with them?” Ye Xiao asked.

“Since there is a lock; there must be a key. I surely can think about something. What it needs on me is absolute power. Strength. If you have no hands, you can’t make fist. Without power, every thing is just a joke!” Zuo Wuji said.

“Like what? I mean, if somebody can provide certain power for you, what do you have to deal with the situation?” Ye Xiao kept asking.

“That’s easy. We give whatever these men want!” Zuo Wuji looked at Ye Xiao and said word by word, “We use Ling-Bao Hall, Feng Zhiling, and Wan Zhenghao as baits to draw them out first.”

“Bait!”

Ye Xiao was shocked.

“Zuo Zuo, would it be too... over? Ling-Bao Hall has helped the kingdom for big one. We plan to give up on them... That... That is not so honorable, is it?” Ye Xiao didn’t feel comfortable about it.

“Xiao Xiao, you simply know nothing about politics. No matter how things look like, if it is relevant to the national interests, everything can be sacrificed. In fact, the auction is over, and the seventy billion is in the kingdom’s royal treasury. What happens to Ling-Bao Hall and Feng Zhiling is not the kingdom’s problem. They are sacrificed, so what? Don’t you think the king will think about baiting? He doesn’t have the right and capable man to complete the mission. That is all!” Zuo Wuji helplessly spoke.

“Hmm. I see. So what should we do to proceed with the baiting plan?” Ye Xiao asked.

“Hmm... Xiao Xiao, you are not saying you will do it, right? You know, if Feng Zhiling and Wan Zhenghao are going to be the baits... they are very likely going to die.” Zuo Wuji sighed.

“Don’t you worry about it. Just tell me... how to proceed it,” Ye Xiao asked. In fact he was speechless.

[Feng Zhiling is sacrificed... So be it.

I am alive. That is all I want!]

“It isn’t that difficult to solve the problem. If we have the power, we just need to...” Zuo Wuji told Ye Xiao everything about the plan. Ye Xiao’s eyes were lit up.

Zuo Wuji told him dozens of schemes one after another, and they were all connected.

Ye Xiao kept thinking about how practical the schemes were. He couldn’t help praising, [What a brain of Zuo Wuji. That is awesome.]

“In fact, to deal with those hidden ones, it is not so hard. It can be easily done as long as we are powerful enough. The most difficult problem in this issue is the House of the Chaotic Storms.” Zuo Wuji sighed. “There must be a force pushing all this ahead. Everybody is under its control. House of the Chaotic Storms is the only one who can do this.”

Ye Xiao nodded. The image of Master Bai acting casually showed up in his sight.

It was sure that Master Bai’s demeanor was impressive even in Ye Xiao’s eyes. Among all the enemies Ye Xiao had in both his lives, he must be the scariest one!

Power, strength, strategy, in every aspect, he was overwhelming.

How could Ye Xiao defeat a man like that!

“What a shame. There is nothing I can think of that can deal with the House of the Chaotic Storms.” Zuo Wuji was frustrated as he said, “We can only wait till they strike, and then we figure out something to defend it.”

Ye Xiao was quiet.

He couldn't blame Zuo Wuji. There was really no way for it.

No matter how good they made a plan, the House of the Chaotic Storms would change everything just within seconds and take control again!

It would be better to just wait for their moves and see what they should do to deal with it.

It would be rather reckless to have a fight against the enemy who was much stronger than themselves!

The only chance that stood in the current situation was the possibility of changing! They might be able to defeat the enemy by schemes!

However, they might also be weaker in schemes!

...

When Ye Xiao left the House of Zuo, it was dark already. Lights were about to be put on in the city.

He made a turn into an alley and blandly said, “Show yourself.”

A figure flashed, and a slim figure showed up in front of him.

The man had a rawboned face, and a pair sharp and cold eyes.

It was Ning Biluo.

The famous No. 1 Assassin in the Land of Han-Yang.

...

Chapter 341: Suppression From Wan-Er

“You have been since I got here.” Ye Xiao looked at Ning Biluo. He then frowned and said, “What are you following me for? Why don’t you go keep an eye on those from the Boundless Lake?”

Ning Biluo was here for the people from the Boundless Lake at the first place.

They were his enemy.

Ning Biluo had been hunted and poisoned by the Boundless Lake, but he still survived. The Boundless Lake even told the world that Ning Biluo’s assassination group was destroyed, and it drove the entire martial world to hunt him. That made him really embarrassed.

In fact, if Ning Biluo didn’t come across Ye Xiao earlier, he would have died for a long time!

Ning Biluo had intense and deep-seated hatred against the Boundless Lake!

That was why Ning Biluo was here. People of the Boundless Lake were here too. Ye Xiao wasn’t surprised about it.

Anyways, Ning Biluo followed Ye Xiao when he found Ye Xiao. That didn’t make Ye Xiao feel comfortable. No matter who was following him in the dark, it wouldn’t be a comfortable thing.

Especially when the man was the No. 1 Assassin in the world.

He knew Ning Biluo wouldn't take his life for the reward, but he still felt uncomfortable!

"Because you are in danger," Ning Biluo answered, "I owe you one."

"You owe me what..." Ye Xiao rubbed the head. Suddenly, he was enlightened, "Hmm. That is true. Now I do need your help anyway. It is kind of you."

"Anything, anytime! I'd die for it!" Ning Biluo spoke word by word.

"Good." Ye Xiao took in a deep breath and said, "Now that things are in a mess. I feel much confident with you on my side."

He did feel more than much confident.

Ning Biluo showed up like a burner in a desperate snowing winter to him.

They returned to the General's House.

What Ye Xiao was going to do was to make a plan and do something about the disturbance.

...

At the same night, Wan of the Clouds suddenly showed up in the east of the city. She was like a white ghost flying into a yard of a house.

“Men of the Sunlight Sect. Out you come and answer me.” Wan of the Clouds had a beautiful voice. However, she sounded overwhelming.

The suppression in her words was delivered out.

A tall and strong man in the house got furious. “Where does this bxtch come from. How dare she talk like that to us, people of the Sunlight Sect? What is it! I am going to break her neck!”

He didn’t finished talking when he kicked the door and rushed out.

At the same time, over a dozen men rushed out to the yard from different rooms.

Three of them looked to the white figure in the yard, and their faces turned pale right away.

However, that man who swore arrived just a few days earlier. He couldn’t bear that somebody insulted his sect. He rushed out

furiously. When an old man wanted to warn him, it was too late.

Wan-Er heard the reply. Her eyes flashed. There was madness in her eyes. While her white figure was moving, over a dozen white shadows rushed to the man like lightning.

The man didn't even have to react before endless white shadows struck on him. He knew the situation was bad, so he shouted. He was just about to sway the sword in his hand when he suddenly felt that his wrist was held.

He was terrified. He hurriedly operate his martial art and kicked in an attempt to get rid of the restraint. If the woman didn't let him go, she would have to take that kick. He thought she was absolutely unable to hold it, as she was after all a woman.

The man did have a good plan. He was doing the right thing, and he would have succeed if it was a normal situation!

However, it was a mistake right here right now!

He had just kicked when he felt his knee in great pain. A finger tapped on it. That finger had hit deep into his knee. He was shaken and then he heard a sound of "pah".

He was slapped on the face.

The man was actually slapped away, no matter how sturdy or tall he was. He rolled in the air before landing. The white figure

showed up in his sight. It followed up to him, and before he hit the floor, the figure had kicked on him over a dozen times.

Three hits on his chests made his chest bones break. Two hits on his head made him spit out blood. His two legs were totally broken, and his ribs were broken. The rest of the hits were on his mouth.

He couldn't even moan because his teeth were all broken.

Apparently, Wan-Er was punishing him for the dirty words he had said, so she hit him mostly on the mouth!

- Boom! -

His body hit the floor. It was rolling on the floor. As he rolled, he spat out blood. There were some teeth cracks in the blood. As a Sky Origin Stage cultivator, he actually couldn't control his own body from rolling away. He rolled to the door and then hit the stone step. - Boom. - And then he rebounded. At last, he was moaning to the sky lying on the floor as his eyes were filled with extreme fear.

[Who is this woman? How come I have no any way to defend and fight back at all.]

Wan-Er humphed. She moved again and stepped on that man. She coldly spoke, "Are you, disciples of the Sunlight Sect, behaving like this? I guess I should help you discipline your men now!"

"Please show mercy, Lady Wan-Er..." The old man with white

beard stepped forward and then stopped the other disciples of his sect. “Don’t do anything stupid. This is Lady Wan-Er from the House of the Chaotic Storms!”

Over a dozen superior cultivators of the Sunlight Sect had gathered over preparing to shout and fight, but now they stopped.

“Lady Wan-Er of the House of the Chaotic Storms!”

It was like spell that made every one of them stop. They all gave up at the same time.

The old man with white beard had wetted his clothes by sweat.

He didn’t expect that Wan of the Clouds would come to them after humiliating them in the auction.

[What is she after?

Does she want to wipe us out?]

“Wan of the Clouds.”

It was a name that reverberated like thunder to everybody in the Sunlight Sect.

Nine hundred years earlier, the No. 1 superior cultivator in the

Sunlight Sect, also the No.1 cultivator in the Land of Han-Yang, Chang Qingzi, offended Wan of the Clouds by words. Wan of the Clouds was in the same look back then, an eighteen years old pretty girl. She actually challenged Chang Qingzi on with a fight in the public while the Sunlight Sect was holding their one thousand years anniversary ceremony. She kicked his ass and punched him into a pig head!

...

Chapter 342: Behave Yourself!

It was the Thousand Years Anniversary Ceremony of the Sunlight Sect. That was a big event back then. The No. 1 Cultivator in the Land of Han-Yang was the host, so countless people in the martial world came to attend the ceremony. However, under the watch of all these people, the “No.1 Cultivator” was beaten up into a pig head!

Wan of the Clouds didn't even make her full effort during the fight. After the fight, she just made hundreds of shadows of herself and then disappeared.

Now, the legendary Wan of the Clouds showed up again. She got the Sunlight Sect again!

Like she did back then, she defeated a superior cultivator of their sect!

It was:

How history repeated itself!

The only difference was that this tall strong man was wounded worse. He had a much dirtier mouth than Chang Qingzi after all!

The other seventeen men all stood there quietly. They looked at Wan of the Clouds, who was vigorous. In their eyes, there were fear and vigilance.

[What is she here for?

Is she going to wipe us out?

What if she is?

What she just did... She can easily take us down by just one hand!]

“People from the Sunlight Sect. Now you are bad-mannered, huh?” Wan-Er glanced at them. “Abusing a guest at night. Acting without basic politeness. Does your headmaster teach you so?”

They were all annoyed and shamed.

[Come on, sister. We were frightened!

You are like death to us right now. You want us to be polite to death?

Wan of the Clouds, she looks about eighteen years old. Why is she acting like an old woman, scolding us like that!]

“Lady Wan.” The old man took in a deep breath and spoke first, “You visit us late at night. Is there anything important you want us to do?”

Finishing the question, he looked at the man under Wan's feet. He was worried.

This old man was a wise guy. He knew Wan of the Clouds well, and he had seen what she was capable of. He knew it would be seeking for death to fight against her. He just laid down himself low and talked like an underling to her. It would always be a good thing to behave low profile. Playing tough would only draw them death!

Besides, he had seen the tough side of Wan of the Clouds in the auction. Now that she came vigorously, if they offended her again, it would be a really messy situation.

“What is your name?” Wan of the Clouds coldly asked.

She totally ignored his question.

[No matter how you show yourself, I have my way to do things!]

The old man held the anger in chest. He just reverently spoke, “I have had the pleasure to meet you several times. I am Ji Chengfeng.”

Wan-Er nodded and said, “Ji Chengfeng, do you have a mind like sieve?”

Ji Chengfeng surrendered to the insult/ “I wonder what you mean by that, my lady? I am old indeed, but with good memory! I never forget anything important.”

Wan-Er humphed. “But I think you have a short memory. I said you should behave yourselves in the auction. Look at you. You have gathered so many people in this city. What are you going do? Since you have a good memory, you are acting against my will on purpose then?”

Ji Chengfeng felt black in sight and he said, “Lady Wan-Er, the House of the Chaotic Storms controls everything. You are powerful and nobody dares to disobey you. However, we just gathered our own men for our own interest. What we do is about our own sect. Do we have to make a report to you for everything we plan?”

Wan-Er humphed and said, “What you are up to is not our concern. I won’t bother to concern. However, I am going to leave the city for a few days. What if you guys do something that hurts our interest in the city... If so, it won’t be a beautiful thing for your sect, I promise. If your life become like a raging fire, I don’t think you will like it, will you?”

Her pretty eyes were watching Ji Chenfeng as she said, “I am here to warn you. In case when you make any mistakes, you will blame us for bullying you on strength.”

Every man from the Sunlight Sect was pissed by what she said.

[Since when we need to be warned?

Are we still the strongest sect in the Land of Han-Yang?

We have just been scolded like sons and grandsons!]

Ji Chengfeng held the anger in his chest and spoke with respect, “I wonder what you don’t want us to do, Lady Wan-Er? Please tell us something, in case we don’t know that would offend you!”

Wan-Er rolled her eyes and said, “You think about it yourself. Anyway, you have to think deeper before you act. Don’t do anything reckless. Don’t do anything you shouldn’t do. Don’t mess with people you should mess with. Do you understand?”

[You said it like it means anything.

Of course we shouldn’t mess with things and people we shouldn’t have! We would never mess with people like you for sure!

How am I going to think about the others?]

Ji Chengfeng and his people were upset about it. None of them know what to say, so it suddenly became so quiet.

Wan-Er stomped harder and the man under her feet moaned loudly. She blandly spoke, “We, the House of the Chaotic Storms, are existing outside this world. We have no relevance to any other forces in your world. That is our principle. You want to do

something, go do it as long as you don't mess with us. Otherwise, we won't let you live well."

"Like this bastard who talked like that!" Wan-Er coldly looked at the man under her feet. "I am not so unhappy after all, so I will spare you. If you dare to do this again, you better watch your head. Oh. No. You won't need to watch your head, because you won't have one!"

She murmured, "I hate it the most when a man talked with a sh*tty mouth. How dare you talk to a pretty lady with those words, especially to me! Humph!"

She kicked on him and then she flew up in the air. She actually stayed in the air like there was something under her feet. She just stood there and said, "Just behave yourselves. Will you! Be wise! Understand?"

And then a white shadow flashed and she was gone.

The seventeen superior cultivators standing there were all filled with anger.

[What the hell is that?

We haven't done anything, yet we were warned.

No. That wasn't warning. That was suppression! That was bullying!

We are a powerful sect in the Land of Han-Yang. We have our dignity! Yet we just got humiliated like that? Again and again?

Do you think we are made from mugs or something?]

...

Chapter 343: Undercurrent; Map!

“Elder, what do we do now? Should we just accept that insult?” People of the Sunlight Sect all looked like on fire. They were breathing heavily.

They suddenly got insulted like that, so they all felt extremely embarrassed.

[That is too suffocating!

That is so uncomfortable.]

At the moment, every one of them had a mass of extreme emotion in their chest waiting to be vented.

When they saw their brother miserably lying on the floor, they knew there must be many of his bones broken. He was nearly crippled. [Yet she called it... mercy?

Because she didn't feel unhappy today?

What if she feels unhappy. What would she do?

That was bullying people on an unbelievable level!

It was extremely intolerable!]

The old man Ji Chengfeng said with anger in his eyes, “You asked me what we do? We do whatever we should do!”

He fiercely said, “I wonder if the House of the Chaotic Storms will get to us for our robbery?! Even though they are able to even hide the truth from the masses, they can never stop everybody from earning their own money!”

“When our men are all here. We do as we planed! Hear me! We stick on the plan!”

In his eyes were ruthlessness. His temples were shaking, and apparently, he was nearly crazy because of anger!

Every one of them was furious. They would burst into madness at any second.

Wan of the Clouds really added endless fuel into a sky reaching flame!

She absolutely pushed those men to their emotional edge. They were so close to have their emotions exploded.

Carrying such extreme emotion, when they were on missions, they would do it like blood storm. They would have no hesitation. No matter who their target was, they wouldn't be merciful.

...

After humiliating the Sunlight Sect, Wan-Er went to the Starlight Sect. She did the same thing on them. She teased them and then beat them up. She scolded them and warned them...

Thus, people in the Starlight Sect became like walking volcanoes too.

Wan-Er just left them and disappeared for real this time.

...

The two great sects were both filled with anger.

If Wan-Er suppressed them further physically, it might lead to an opposite result. They might have been scared too much and wouldn't dare to do anything. That wasn't the House of the Chaotic Storms wanted though...

Wan-Er went to a new place.

It was a secret location.

It wasn't a secret location of the House of the Chaotic Storms though. It belonged to the Kingdom of Lanfeng. On appearance, it was a granary of the Kingdom of Chen, but in fact, the officials who worked there were all Kingdom of Lanfeng's men, although

they were paid by the Kingdom of Chen.

Wan-Er waved her hand and then disappeared in the dark night.

A whistling arrow flew into the granary with hoarse sound.

In the granary, somebody picked up the arrow. He felt that there was a map on the arrow.

There was information about the guards of the royal house, shift schedule, locations, guarding plan, leader's names...

There was also information about the defense plan of the Chen-Xing City, showing all the military forces' locations...

In addition, it was about the locations of all granaries and warehouses, names of the guards, number of the guards, cultivation levels of them...

Everything in detail was shown on the map, useful or not!

“Whoever drew this map is far beyond brilliant. He must be a devil!”

An official with big beard in the granary looked at the map and praised.

“I have never seen a map that has so much information on it. There are a lot to learn from it. This is the map of the future of the Chen-Xing City... It shouldn't exist! It cannot be!”

“Even the guardian of the kingdom could never draw such a map!” He kept looking at the map. In his eyes was crazy admiration!

“Captain, would it be a trap that the Kingdom of Chen made for us on purpose? Are they trying to draw us in?” A man beside him spoke carefully.

“Trap? You idiot! Can't you just think with your brain?” The big bearded captain glanced at his assistant and said, “If people of the Kingdom of Chen know who we are, would they need to set us up like this? They can just send an army to kill us all. Isn't it much more efficient... You moron! You know what, even if all the information on the map is fake, the technics of such a map is more important than our lives in all! This is a masterpiece!”

Many of the people put down their misgivings and nodded like they were enlightened.

[Captain is right. If we are already revealed, they wouldn't need to set us up. Whoever sent us the secret arrow must be very capable, as he can draw such a map. It would be rather an easy job for him to kill us all. That would be easier!]

“Then this map must be real... Wouldn't it be that with this map, we can do whatever we want in the capital of the Kingdom of Chen

now?” another man said with his eyes lit up.

“Seems so.” The big beard captain rubbed his lower jaw and said, “However, if you want to do something, you need to be capable of doing it first. We are isolated here. What we can do is limited. However, we can use some power. In the Chen-Xing City, there are over half of the people who hates the Kingdom of Chen. We should use their powers...”

He thought for a while and said, “We just give out informations this time. We shall not take part in the actions. There will naturally be somebody to proceed the plan. We have to hide ourselves in the dark...”

“Go contact our men hidden in those forces. Give them the information on this map. Hurry.”

The big beard guy showed profound eyes. “So, what a good plan. The Kingdom of Chen will fall into a great crisis...”

The next moment, he frowned. “But, who on earth was that man who gave us this map? How did he know our true identity?”

Surely, if that man didn’t know their true identity, he would never give them this map.

...

Chapter 344: Two Assassins

Only when that man knew that this place was the center of the intelligence network of the Kingdom of Lanfeng would he deliver such information to it, so that they could send the information to all the spies of the Kingdom of Lanfeng.

Since this person was able to make such a marvelous map, of course he was also able to know their real identities. However, there was one thing that worried the men of the Kingdom of Lanfeng...

[Who is this guy?

Although he didn't show hostility to us this time, he even actually helped us, but still, it is not a comfortable thing to have someone knowing our secrets so well...]

They knew they would never come up with the answer just by thinking. They had to tell themselves that this guy was not their enemy.

That was fine.

At least they weren't enemies for now!

...

On the other side, Ning Biluo followed Ye Xiao to the secret liaison office. Ye Xiao called over Liu Changjun by some mysterious trick.

When Liu Changjun saw Ning Biluo, his entire face turned red, although he was always expressionless.

That was the charm of an idol made him so!

In this world, Ning Biluo was the common idol to all assassins.

Ning Biluo had been the No. 1 Assassin in the Land of Han-Yang for decades. Nobody could threaten his position. He was known as the No. 1.

However, his assassination association was ranked much lower.

That was a question Liu Changjun had for Ning Biluo.

[I wonder why Ning Biluo would organize an assassination association?

Wouldn't it be much more convenient to just be an isolate assassin?

It's fine if you really want to lead a team, but your team sucks. That is a flaw on your title!]

Ning Biluo looked at Liu Changjun. His eyes were sparkling.

He could tell that this man should be in a much higher position in the ranking list. He was stronger in spirit, cultivation level and vigor.

In the world's assassins ranking, Liu Changjun was the ninth. He was surely one of the top ten assassins in the world. That meant he was one of the most powerful assassins!

However, in the past, Ning Biluo knew that Liu Changjun was actually no higher than thirtieth. An assassin lived for killing. An assassin should be good at taking others' life, and also at saving themselves. A good assassin always kept a secret move in case anything unexpected happened. The more famous an assassin was, the less possible he could cover his last secret move. The top ten ranking was simple a joke. It was just a list that was made by a bunch of people according to what the assassins had done that were known to the public. It meant nearly nothing.

In fact, many well hidden assassins were truly unbelievably powerful.

They might not be famous, but they were absolutely super strong.

Most importantly, nobody knew their names and their traces. That was the most horrible, terrifying assassin.

Ning Biluo wouldn't say that he was actually not strong enough to be the No. 1 Assassin in the world, yet he surely knew he wasn't. It meant nothing to just have such a title. The top ten assassins might all have certain capabilities, but they actually were not as powerful as it was said.

That was why Ning Biluo had never really respected the assassins like Liu Changjun!

However, when he saw Liu Changjun today, he was surprised that Liu Changjun was, although cold as people said he was, he was carrying much less killing intent as he should have. He was simply like a normal person.

Most shockingly, he was like hiding all his spiritual power like a sword that would come out from the scabbard at any second. He was full of sharpness, but it was well hidden.

Ning Biluo wasn't an ordinary person. Liu Changjun could hide it from others, but not from Ning Biluo. Ning Biluo knew that what Liu Changjun was hiding must be from his strong cultivation capability.

It was the second time that they met each other. Ning Biluo had thought that he knew well about Liu Changjun, but now he knew that it was wrong to rely on first impression!

The last time they met, Liu Changjun was on his way to kill Ye Xiao. It wasn't a long time before. The impression Ning Biluo had about Liu Changjun was actually two levels weaker than the

present.

[What the hell! How can he improve so much within just such a short time?!

Does it mean that since he followed Ye Xiao, within several months, he got improved significantly.]

When Ning Biluo saw Liu Changjun, his eyes were filled with complicated expressions. When he looked at Ye Xiao, there was curiosity in his eyes too.

[It must be Ye Xiao who helped with Liu Changjun's cultivation.

There is no other explanation.

Ye Xiao, as a young lord in the general's house, how could he help improve a top ranking assassin in cultivation and spiritual mind so fast?

Now, Liu Changjun should be qualified enough to be one of the top ten assassins in the world!]

"Liu Changjun, I guess your strength have increased a lot these days," Ning Biluo slowly spoke.

Liu Changjun smiled with respect. "I am flattered."

All the assassins in the world who saw Ning Biluo would call him master, as long as they were not enemies, because of Ning Biluo's position. He deserved it. However, Liu Changjun didn't want to tell him how he got improved.

Without Ye Xiao's permission, Liu Changjun would never tell anybody that secret, not even to Ning Biluo.

Ning Biluo nodded. "Good."

Liu Changjun perfunctorily laughed.

If Wan Zhenghao was there, he would most likely be shocked. [Liu Changjun? He can laugh? Look at how many times he laughed... Is he still the man with a dead face?]

Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "Ning, in fact... You also can be improved."

Ning Biluo knew exactly what Ye Xiao meant by that. A sense of tiredness showed up in his eyes. He replied with a soft voice, "But... I can't."

Ye Xiao nodded. He understood.

Liu Changjun said, "Master Ning, there is one thing that keeps confusing me. I wonder if you can enlighten me today?"

“What is it?” Ning Biluo became serious. His face looked a bit dark too.

Maybe he knew what Liu Changjun would ask. He just didn’t stop him.

“Powerful like you, you can conquer the world. Under this sky, except some legendary figures, you can kill anybody you want, even a king.”

Liu Changjun asked with respect, “However, you have been leading your assassination group. It brings you only apprehension, and it only binds your hands and put you into a dangerous situation. It is truly...”

...

Chapter 345: Until Death!

Liu Changjun didn't dare to continue. If he continued, it would humiliate Ning Biluo.

Ning Biluo and Ye Xiao both knew what he meant.

Ye Xiao showed confusion too.

He understood Liu Changjun's words.

In fact, Ye Xiao wanted to ask the same question too. If Ning Biluo let go of that useless assassination organization, there would be no one except the House of the Chaotic Storms that was able to take Ning Biluo down.

An assassin was fearful for fetter the most.

Ning Biluo, the king of assassins, actually had such a fetter.

An assassin should be a leader.

Ning Biluo actually was a leader.

He didn't do it well!

Why wouldn't he give it up then?

Why did he still want such an embarrassing thing?

Ning Biluo looked pale under the watch of the two men. His sharp eyes became dim a bit as he said, “That year, I was eight years old... There were those men dressed in black. They slaughtered every strong men in my town...”

“There were only women and kids left.”

“For the five years to come, all survivors became those men’s slaves. They lived, but with a life worse than death... The entire thirty thousand elderlies and kids!”

Ning Biluo sounded peaceful, but Ye Xiao and Liu Changjun could hear the hatred in his voice.

“That five years, we stayed with those monsters. I was beaten up to near death many times. The elderlies saved me always. Some of them... were crippled or dead because of me...”

“I escaped eventually, and I learnt a lot. When I returned to that place... I used a whole year to kill them all, the over seven thousand monsters in black...”

“However, there were less than five thousand of our people that were still alive by then... I saved them. They were tortured... About four thousand of them were crippled...”

“About two hundred kids...”

“They are my responsibility that I can never let down.” Ning Biluo took in a deep breath.

“I accepted missions like crazy, because I just want to make more money for them.”

“It is always not enough.”

“So they let the young generation follow me...”

Ye Xiao and Liu Changjun knew and understood what's next, even if Ning Biluo didn't tell them.

Those young lads must be the members of Ning Biluo's assassination group.

“I have lead them all the way... to now... but, my assassination group is completely destroyed by those martial forces.”

Ning Biluo stood there, looking desolate. “However, the five thousand people have become twenty thousand now. Some of them have children, and some have become elderlies. We are all living deep in the mountain... We need resources. We need money. We need a lot of money.”

“But I... I can't make that much money now.”

Ning Biluo bitterly smiled, “However, even though I know I cannot, I have to do it. These people, they are my fetters that I can never let go in my life.”

When he spoke, he was calm.

Under his peaceful and calm voice, the heaviness inside his words made Ye Xiao and Liu Changjun feel depressed.

It felt like a huge mountain fell on their hearts.

They never thought that this No. 1 Assassin in the world actually had been carrying that much.

“I don’t dare to lose my freedom. I don’t work for anybody. I have to take as many tasks as I can, make as much money as possible. I cannot accept people’s help... because in people’s eyes... There are forty-seven hundred cripples! They can take care of themselves, they can live by themselves... But... Who can possibly support them financially?”

“There is the medicine cost too...”

Ning Biluo blandly smiled. “I chose to take the responsibility, so I have to carry it until death. I won’t give them up. They are all my relatives. They are people who suffered a lot to protect me and other kids.”

“To what end are you going to carry that?” Liu Changjun took in a deep breath.

“To the day... when they never need me to.” Ning Biluo looked down and blandly spoke, “There are many of them... who are really old now... They are dying soon...”

Ye Xiao was speechless.

He felt it burning in his heart.

Ning Biluo’s words sounded ruthless.

However, it showed his attitude: “I will carry it until they die!”

Ye Xiao even understood Ning Biluo further. Not only when those people died, even to the last day of his life, he would still carry this burden!

“I will carry it until they die!”

Or maybe “until I die!”

Ye Xiao sighed and said, “Ning, I don’t think you will be short for money, as you are such a capable man. Rob the rich, steal something, lie for money, even do some blackmail... It would never be a tough job for you to make money. Why does it seem so rough for you?”

Ye Xiao thought that it was fair that Ning Biluo wouldn't answer him. However, he didn't expect that Liu Changjun would make an answer.

Liu Changjun widely opened his eyes and spoke in righteousness, "You made a mistake, Monarch. I understand Master Ning! Because we are both assassins! Assassins earn their livings by killing somebody wanted. It lasts for thousands of years. How can we ruin such spirit just for some small problems we are facing? Assassins are not robbers or thieves. How can we rob or steal. It is simply what we should never do. We have our pride and we have our principle!"

Ye Xiao was shocked. He actually didn't know what to say. He didn't even realize how his face looked like. [That... That is some really weird theory and arbitrary!]

Looking at two of the most famous assassins in the world talking to each other with righteousness, one nodding while the other praising, Ye Xiao felt like his stomach was filled with crap. He couldn't say a word.

[Damn. What kind of a world it is?

Some officials call themselves descendants of saints and they are well educated, yet they are breaking laws, seeking personal gains in work, doing whatever they want, behaving like thieves and prostitutes... There are all kinds of them.

Yet the assassins in the martial world... are actually deferring to... their professional ethics?

It is the assassination professional ethics though!]

Two assassins discussing such a topic so seriously, it made Ye Xiao felt that... [Am I really... out of day now?]

...

Chapter 346: I'll Hire You!

Ye Xiao sighed and said, “Ning, even though you have to observe that... assassination ethics, you can always ask for help from your friends, right? Let’s assume that there are 20 thousand people and five thousand are crippled. Including residence, medicine, food, it should be no more than fifty thousand taels of silver per month. Am I right?”

Twenty thousand people, fifty thousand taels, that meant two and a half taels for one person. It didn’t sound expensive though. The price of commodities in the Land of Han-Yang wasn’t high. Normally, a family of four would need no more than ten taels per month. That was no more than three taels per person. Ye Xiao made it two and a half per person. It was more than enough for those people.

Ning Biluo was quiet for a while before he said, “Basically they were just like normal people, but many of them need special care. Some of them need medicines all year. The cost of the medicine is already huge. In fact, two hundred thousand would be just enough.”

“Two hundred thousand? Well it is not that much. Two hundred thousand per month; about three million a year and thirty million for ten years...” Ye Xiao coughed. He realized that it might not be a huge number for himself.

However, it was really quite a heavy burden for an assassin who killed for living. Ning Biluo also needed money for their cultivation...

It was truly too much of a burden for him!

To make it clearer, try to understand it this way. One tael of silver was equal to a thousand copperplates. One copperplate was more or less like one yuan, so one tael silver was equal to a thousand yuan. A hundred taels meant a hundred thousand yuan. Ten thousand taels meant ten million. Two hundred thousand taels per month meant two hundred million yuan every month!

That was the number to feed those people.

That was about three billion yuan per year.

Maybe he could make it for the first year, but what about ten years later?

Like Ning Biluo said, to carry on till death, how much was that? What a huge number would it be?

In fact, it was an unbearable burden, no matter it was on whom. For Ye Xiao, it might not be a big problem for him to spend dozens of million for now, maybe even billion would be nothing serious, but that was because he had just earned a lot from the auction.

Several months earlier when he was just reborn, he had worried about just dozens of taels. Times have truly changed!

“Ning, I can solve your problem. I have quite a lot of money right now...” Ye Xiao seriously said.

He really wanted to help him. Ning Biluo was a good man. Even if he couldn't return the favor, Ye Xiao would be happy to do it. It was a good thing to do after all.

Ning Biluo was quiet again as he said, “Lord Ye, you saved my life twice. I cannot return the favor already. If you help me again, I truly cannot owe it anymore.

“A favor is always most difficult to return. I owe them a huge one already. Do you want me to owe more to you?”

Ning Biluo said with a smile, “I don't think I can accept any help from others now. I would rather earn some money by myself.”

Ye Xiao solemnly spoke, “Indeed, it is difficult to return a favor. However, have you ever thought what would happen to them after you die? You said you will take the responsibility until you don't need to. Maybe you know it, or maybe you don't. There are two aspects on your words. If you can return the favor before you die, it will be a wonderful thing. But if you cannot, if the one you should return the favor to is still alive while you are already dead, what then? Do you want to take the responsibility to your next life?”

Ning Biluo's face turned dark. He was silent.

Ye Xiao's words were harsh and cruel.

However, it was a problem Ning Biluo had to face sooner or later.

Ning Biluo was known as the No. 1 Assassin in the world. It was no doubt. However, even the No. 1 Assassin would die. If Ye Xiao didn't save him, he would have already died twice.

[If I die, how do I take the responsibility I promised that I would?

What will happen to those people?

Most of them are ill and disabled. They cannot feed themselves.

If I die, what happens to them?

Will they die with disease? Die starving? Die in misfortune?

No matter how they will die, they die because of my death They die with sorrow!]

“So, you shouldn't turn me down. I don't ask anything in return anyway,” Ye Xiao seriously said.

“You...” Ning Biluo looked up at Ye Xiao. He wanted to say that what he was afraid of the most was that Ye Xiao never asked for anything in return.

[It will make me feel I am in debt forever.

You never ask anything back in return. That is a huge burden on me. Why can't you just want something from me!]

Ye Xiao waved his hand and said, "Alright, alright. Don't look at me like that. I don't like it. Look, Ning. Let me hire you. I will pay you for what you will do for me. I hire you to help me solve my problem now. That makes us have an employment relationship. How does it sound?"

And then he bitterly laughed. "I believe you clearly know what situation I am in. We are on the edge now, and I am pulling you in with us this time. You may lose your life because of it. Let's just say, I ask it as a return of the favor I did for you!"

He waved his hand to stop Ning Biluo while he wanted to say something. He said, "Let's try to deal with the situation this time. If we fail, what does all the money mean to me? Let me give you some before everything ends. You can take care of those people on your side first. At least you wouldn't need to worry about them anymore. You don't need to take that burden with you to your next life. Even though you don't take it now, if we die in this disturbance, my money will be taken by others. It is better you get it than others do... Wouldn't you agree?"

Ning Biluo heard it. He thought it was reasonable. He owed Ye Xiao two life-saving favors after all. It made no difference to owe him more anyway. If he could take care of those people that he had

to, he could just hand over his life to Ye Xiao. No matter what, his life was saved, so his life was given. That was fair.

...

Chapter 347: Action!

Ning Biluo was having some negative thoughts. Facing such a situation, Ye Xiao had no confidence to get through it, and Ning Biluo couldn't be sure that they could have a bright future.

Although Ning Biluo could only see death in front of them, he had to do it. Since so, he had nothing to worry about, and he didn't need to hesitate anymore. It was his only choice as it could not only solve the problem about his people, but also return the favor to Ye Xiao!

Thinking about that, Ning Biluo nodded as he said, "Fine. It is very possibly my last battle in my life anyway. I will just take some money from you then. I owe you a lot already anyway, it's not that different to owe you more... I have to say this though. If we survive, I will have to return the money for sure."

Ye Xiao equivocally spoke, "You truly have a strong personality. Fine. Whatever you say."

Things were settled then.

Liu Changjun was curious and he said, "Well then, Boss, how much would you pay Master Ning?"

Ye Xiao hesitated and said, "How much? Will one billion taels work well?"

Liu Changjun and Ning Bilou were both stunned!

Even they were two famous assassins who had seen a lot in the world, they were shocked by Ye Xiao's offer.

Twenty thousand taels for one month; about three million for one year; about thirty million for ten years... One billion would be enough for them to use for three hundred years.

Those people were all normal people. They would never live that long!

Looking at Ning Biluo and Liu Changjun's faces changing, Ye Xiao thought that maybe he named less than they expected. He thought that one billion was just the price for two or three supreme dan beads. It might be less than enough, so he said, "Well then, two billion! How's that!"

He said two billion like he was saying twenty taels!

Liu Changjun had experienced the auction lately, so it wasn't strange for him to hear the word billion. Ning Biluo had never seen or even heard such a number, so he was shocked like hell.

Ye Xiao saw Ning Biluo's face changed and thought maybe it was still not enough for him. He didn't know how much would be alright, so he said, "Is it still too low? Ning, I know you as a forthright man. Just name a price to me. I won't refuse!"

“No, no, no... You are giving too-too much... I will never need two billion. Not even one billion. That is truly too much.” Ning Biluo understood the situation and waved his hands.

He had lived a life as an assassin. Half of the time, he was the king of assassins. He should have seen lots of money in his life, however, comparing to the real rich ones, he was just a poor man!

Ye Xiao just named one billion, two billion like blinking eyes. More than that, he actually asked Ning Biluo to name a price himself and he wouldn't reject!

Now... Now he was counting the notes on the side.

What was rich guy? This surely was.

Ye Xiao took out a pile of notes that was worth a million taels. He put them into Ning Biluo's hands and said, “I really don't want to judge you, but you are really acting draggy on this. Come on, you are a legend in the assassin's world... A legend like this? Don't make me look down upon you... You said yourself that you will return the money if you survive, didn't you? Don't be a p*ssy. Be a man...”

Ning Biluo didn't have time to refuse when Ye Xiao had already said everything.

Ning Biluo held the notes with his mouth wide opened. He was blank.

Liu Changjun was trying so hard not to laugh out loud.

It was a historic moment. The legendary assassin Ning Biluo was actually acting so laughably. That was a memorable moment. As the witness of it, Liu Changjun should be proud!

Ning Biluo decided not to say a word.

Shut up and take the money.

He nodded quietly and then put the notes into his space ring.

He really had nothing to say.

Even the space ring was a gift from Ye Xiao. What more could he say!

He really didn't need to say anything under such embarrassing circumstances.

He just kept it in mind.

It was better to do than to talk much!

Nothing could be worth one billion in the world. Even the reward for Ye Xiao's death was not more than half a billion. It was money

for murder, not for hiring.

Even all the assassins together on a mission wouldn't cost more than one billion!

Ye Xiao was just trying to help him.

[Somebody help me, I surely should help him back! Favors exchanged!] Ning Biluo said something in mind, [Little help should bring more in return!]

“What do we do now? With Master Ning, we are well strengthened!” Liu Changjun was excited.

Liu Changjun hadn't been confident, but with Ning Biluo getting on board, he felt extremely confident!

[The king of assassins!

Legend of the assassin's world!]

“I need you two to tell me about those assassins and superior cultivator from different sects. Their personality, their martial arts and... their ways of doing things...”

Ye Xiao said.

They sat together. Liu Changjun was the first one to talk and introduced every one he knew. Ning Biluo sat aside, listening and replenishing some words from time to time.

As the basic lessons of assassins, the two of them were doing great. They truly knew a lot about other assassins.

When they finished, it was already late at night.

Ye Xiao stood up.

“We need to make a disturbance first. We need to stir it up more and seek opportunity in the chaos... Better now than later. We shall do it now.” Ye Xiao enigmatically smiled.

Zuo Wuji had told Ye Xiao many plans. Ye Xiao found that any one of them would work well right now.

“What exactly should we do?” the two assassins asked at the same time.

“We plant bribes on somebody; we fish in troubled waters; we confuse the public...” Ye Xiao smiled with viciousness.

“Uh...” The two assassins were confused.

“We should do...” - Blablabla... - Ye Xiao lowered his voice and told them the plan excitedly.

“...” Ning Biluo and Liu Changjun were both speechless.

The viciousness and scheming of Ye Xiao were in a extraordinary level for sure.

It was truly lunatic. Maybe it was even making people's hackles up. That might be well described!

...

Chapter 348: Rock The Boat

“According to the information from you, this Boundless Saint’s attack can only be faked by myself... We are doing this in a small range. Let’s keep it among just us.” Ye Xiao said, “As for the two great sects and the other superior cultivators’ attacks, you two know everything about them. Just do whatever is needed... Let’s rock it now!”

“One more thing. We have to make it a big issue. The bigger the better.”

Ye Xiao was serious.

They did as he said.

They started it right away.

The two assassins saw Ye Xiao was getting on it so quickly, so they didn’t dare to delay it. They were both decisive men. They nodded and said, “Absolutely. We shall get on it now. We are not good at scheming, but we are professional in making disturbances!”

Assassins had different methods to kill. Under many situations, it would be impossible to kill the target without making a big disturbance to cover the mission.

Almost every assassin was expert in making disturbances. It was

a basic lesson for assassins. Ning Biluo and Liu Changjun were rather good at it, and they were among the best of the best!

Ye Xiao assigned the mission to them. That was a good choice!

He wondered how big a noise they would make for the disturbance? They were good at making disturbance, and they were both bold. The Chen-Xing City was surely going to be more chaotic than before, maybe times more!

The wind blew in the dark night.

Ye Xiao dressed in black and was running on the roof, gliding in the wind.

Suddenly, he felt so good about being unrestrained and far-ranging. He thought of the days he was living in the Qing-Yun Realm in his previous life.

He felt that he was closer and closer to the day he returned to the Qing-Yun Realm.

At the moment, people of the Sunlight Sect were all furious. They were swearing, but no one dared to swear loudly. It seemed that they were afraid to be heard by others.

The big bearded man who got hurt wasn't an ordinary person. He was the nephew of the Head Master of the Sunlight Sect. He was good at cultivation. His name was Mu Zizhu, a capable man with a

strong background. That was why he was wild and arrogant, so people didn't really like him.

They all got over trying to cure him, but no one said anything to comfort him. Although they didn't like him, it was truly a scene that made everybody speechless.

It was truly difficult to say anything to comfort him.

[How? Let's seek revenge on the b*tch Wan of the Clouds when you are better? Rape her?]

That was something nobody should recklessly say.

They were murmuring some bad words, but they never dared to say anything serious and say it loud. If they said something like that, maybe Wan of the Clouds would show up right away.

If that happened, nobody could survive.

Even if Wan of the Clouds killed everybody in this place, the Sunlight Sect would dare not to say a word. They might even send her some gifts, begging for forgiveness. She represented the most powerful force in the world. That made her the one who spoke for justice.

It wasn't something special. It happened on other people before. They knew how serious it was, so they could only murmur. That was all!

Since so, if they didn't mention revenge, didn't mention fighting back for him, how would that comfort him?

Nothing else could comfort him.

Everybody there was upset.

When they saw others upset, they might feel happy or excited. Now it was their turn to be upset. They only felt frustrated!

"Ah... Look how things ends. We simply can do nothing though," one of them finally said something, as silence didn't make anybody feel better. "It is the House of the Chaotic Storms in charge here in the capital. We are living under other's shelter. We have to lower our head... Besides, women, that is how they act."

"Right. Besides, women all have that kind of temper. They are unpredictable. They always feel sick for several days every month. Their mind status will go wrong too. Maybe it is the day this woman is not feeling so well. We just hit on the bad luck..." The other one made a guess.

"Right. That is reasonable. Maybe that is the truth. Besides, we are cultivators in the martial world. We suffer. That is normal. The more you experience, the wiser you will become..."

"A wise man knows when to retreat. We endure it, so that we can live longer. It is a heroic thing to do. It is never immoral!"

“Yes, that’s right. We are generous men. We will let the girl go because that is what a hero will do!”

They kept talking and they talked more and more excitedly. The topic kept altering. Gradually, they actually made themselves sound smart, wise, generous, heroic, great...

A lie, if repeated often enough, would be accepted as truth. Superior cultivators or ordinary people, when they tried so hard to comfort themselves, they all became fools who enjoyed the victory they imagined.

They were getting more and more excited as they vented the anger in their chests. They totally forgot the man Mu Zizhu on the ground. His head had become like a pig head.

His two eyes were swollen. and they became two narrow lines. His face was covered by blood, and there was blood oozing out from his mouth while he slavered. His cheek were deeply dented, and none of his teeth was left.

His legs, ribs, arms... were all broken into pieces...

Only, there were lights of hatred coming out from the lines of his swollen eyes. He didn’t make a sound though.

It was right at this moment that a vicious voice sounded with giggling, “Ah, the famous Sunlight Sect. The most powerful sect in

the world. How come you end up so pathetic like this? Who did this to you? Hmm. Haha. I heard you were beaten up by a woman? Oh my. How imposing to be kicked hard by a woman. Yet you actually praise yourselves... Gosh. You are truly a bunch of heroes!”

It was full of obvious taunt.

The gloat in his voice could be heard three hundred miles away.

The superior cultivators of the Sunlight Sect all looked up to where the voice came, only to see a dark figure dressed in black standing in the air beyond the eaves. It seemed like an illusion, but that figure was actually real.

In his eyes, there was that coldness and viciousness flowing, shining.

It seemed all lives in the world were nothing useful but walking flesh that could be slaughtered as he wished.

...

Chapter 349: Framing

The guy held nothing in his hands. His black robe fluttered in the woods as he looked nearly a part of the night. His figure suddenly showed up in the dark night in the howling wind. It was like he changed the view of the surroundings into dark hell.

“Who’s there?” The guys thought he was familiar, but they just couldn’t recall.

“Heh, heh... Ah... Tut-tut...” The man in black laughed coldly and spoke with a sigh, “How poor. Who is that... Look how hard he is punched. How miserable. Look at his arms in pieces like lotus roots... Are you the Sunlight Sect going to produce lotus roots?”

And then he shook his head, saying, “We are all well educated men. Look, I... Hmm. I think of a couplet. Let’s play a game. If you give me a good answer, I... Hmm. You will get your rewards!”

And then he acted like he was thinking hard. He spoke with weird voice after shaking his head for a while, “Hmm, the first line is... [What brings a love](#)? Ahahaha...”

He had just said the first line and he was already laughing wildly.

Apparently, he felt so good about humiliating these men of the Sunlight Sect.

“Crazy bastard!”

The guys only felt so furious as if their chests bursted!

[Where the hell did this bastard come from? His acts weird. He talks with sharp tongue. He speaks sarcastically to us. He is totally abusing us... What more shall we say to him?]

They were just humiliated by Wan of the Clouds, and the anger was still flaming in their chests, yet there came another one.

It was challenging their endurance!

[We can't bear it anymore!

Look at how bloody miserable it is here. How dare you play your game to us?

What brings a lover?

It is definitely sarcasm. He is teasing about Mu Zizhu's arms. He said his arm is like lotus roots...]

Ji Chengfeng's face turned cold as he said, "Sir, you have superior capability. I guess you must be some well-known figure. Why are you covering your face and teasing us here at this night? Wouldn't it damage your reputation as some master cultivator?"

The man in black laughed wickedly. "Reputation? What? Are you

blind? Now you finally realize I am like a master cultivator to you? A master cultivator does things in his own way. I am making things easier by playing games with you. Didn't you hear me? Things will be better for you if you can give me a good answer. What you should do now... is to give me the answer quickly. Why can't you just take the god-given opportunity that I spare you. That is such waste. Don't you think so, old man?"

"Opportunity your ass!" One of the guys couldn't take it anymore as he spoke with anger.

He felt like he would definitely explode if he kept enduring it.

He jumped up with his sword flashing. He was determined to kill that man.

He couldn't hold his anger anymore.

[What? Are you going to humiliate us more? One after another, is this ever going to an end?

We cannot mess with Wan of the Clouds. Fine. You are just a man who knows where you are from! How dare you!]

The man in black shouted with anger, "You Sunlight Sect people! You really don't appreciate what's good for you! What an opportunity! You blind bastards! You are just pieces of sh*t. I bring you opportunity with kind heart, but you don't appreciate it. You don't want to answer me. Fine. You dare to abuse me! And you

actually try to kill me!”

“My first line is ‘what brings a lover’! You bunch of fools. You should give me the answer... ‘it needs no plum when there is almond’! Bastards! Don’t you sway your sword at me.”

While speaking, he acted like he was wronged. He was furious and he asked, “Can you even be reasonable!”

The sword was so close to him though.

He suddenly moved aside. He was flying in the air like he wasn’t real, all the while his black robe fluttered in the wind. He spoke wickedly, “I guess you decided to pick the hard way. One of you have just been beaten up and ended up like a lotus root. That is what you deserve. That it is! If I was the person who did that, I will tear you into pieces. You deserve no mercy!”

While he was speaking, he flew around. Suddenly, there came a flash of light, and then a sound. - Ting! -

The man who rushed over to him with the sword fell down to the floor.

When he touched the floor, he was already dead.

The guys were shocked!

They didn't even see the man in black do anything, yet one of them was down!

They had a closer look at the body and felt shocked.

The body was undamaged, except there was a red dot on his temple.

A tiny drop of blood it was.

It was bloody red!

It was an instant knock down with one strike!

This man in black was actually some extremely powerful cultivator?!

The man who died was at the second level of the Sky Origin Stage!

However, he died within instant, with no sound, no signs!

Ji Chengfeng looked at the red dot. While he looked at it, the anger in his chest was getting bigger. He looked up all of a sudden while staring at the man on the roof. He spoke word by word while gritting with his teeth, "Boundless Saint?!"

They had talked about who in the world used needles as his weapon.

Boundless Saint was their conclusion.

On that day, Boundless Saint showed up to prove that he never used poison on his needles by killing an innocent man.

After that, he shouted, “My needles never have poison!”

He was flying here and there that time, and he was also acting like a ghost!

He talked wickedly with a weird voice, and he could always enrage people.

What he had said was still resounding in their ears.

Now, a man who acted exactly like that showed up again.

The weird method was the same. The killing was the same.

The weapon was... also a needle!

The blood on the dead man's temper was bright red. Apparently, the needle didn't carry poison.

[No wonder he looks so familiar...

That is who his is!]

Suddenly, people who had seen the Boundless Saint the other day all recognized him. The guy in black now was Boundless Saint!

[Bastard! You come make more troubles against the Sunlight Sect while we are in trouble!]

...

It must be hard for you to understand this. The raw for this line is 因何而得偶(what brings a lover), also refer to 因荷而得藕(lotus roots come from lotus). The perfect answer is 有幸不需媒人(it needs no matchmaker but only destiny), also refer to 有杏不需梅(it needs no plum when there is almond).

Chapter 350: It Is You, as Expected

The man chuckled and said, “Poor Sunlight Sect. I am right about your blindness. You actually mistake me for the Boundless Saint. Hahahaha... How hilarious! You have eyes yet you are blind. Poor things.”

Ji Chengfeng blandly spoke, “Oh really? We mistake you for somebody else?”

The man in black spoke in a mirthless voice, “Absolutely! How could that Boundless Saint be in the same league with me. How can you be so sure that I am that guy!”

Ji Chengfeng blandly replied, “You don’t have to play your tricks on us. If you are not the Boundless Saint, there is a very simple way to prove it. I dare you wouldn’t do it though.”

The man in black sneered. “What way? How simple is it? You want me to take off my mask?”

Ji Chengfeng looked at the man in black with hatred and slowly spoke, “We have never seen the face of the Boundless Saint. Even if you take off your mask, we can’t recognize you either. I have a much easier way though. You just need to say something to us, and we will know whether you are Boundless Saint or not!”

“What should I say?”

“Well, it is...” Ji Chengfeng’s eyes were filled with taunt. “... Boundless Saint is a nasty son of a b*tch!”

The man in black stopped talking. His eyes were filled with intent of killing; that was scary.

It suddenly became so terrifying and depressing.

After a moment of silence, the man’s eyes became sharper and scarier. Ji Chengfeng knew that the man must be pissed. He hurriedly gathered energy in his body preparing for a fight, in case the man attacked.

However, he casually spoke, “What? You don’t feel like saying it? What a simple way to prove yourself. It is merely some words!”

The masked man in black suddenly laughed as he said, “Who do you think you are? Do you think you can tell me what to say? I won’t say it. What are you going to do about it?”

Ji Chengfeng nodded slowly and spoke word by word, “Whether you will say it or not, it is fine. Anyway, if you want to leave this place, it will be... very difficult!”

He waved his hand and fifteen superior cultivators of the Sunlight Sect made attacking gestures at the same time. They were surrounding the man already.

The man in black chuckled and said, “You ignorant people. You

truly don't know how big the world can be. I want to come, I come. I want to leave, I leave. Do you think you can stop me, with your bunch of useless guys?"

While he was talking, he slowly flew up. Apparently, he was preparing to leave.

Ji Chengfeng stared at him and blandly said, "It's fine if you want to leave. I am just wondering why the Boundless Saint came to our place and humiliated us, even killed our man. Wouldn't it be ignominious to just leave without any explanation?"

The man in black humphed and said, "I am just passing by and checking if anything interesting happened. I should have left after I saw it, but I thought you were so poor so I decided to give you an opportunity. I just didn't know that you bunch of insensible fools would actually attack me. That is why I have to punish you. Now that things are done. I don't want to be here with you anymore.

"One last thing. I am not the Boundless Saint. Ji Chengfeng, you are wrong. You made such irresponsible remarks. If people of the Boundless Lake hunt you down, it is you who caused it. Don't blame me for that!"

Ji Chengfeng coldly smiled. "Should I say thank you for your advice!"

Another cultivator of the Sunlight Sect couldn't take it anymore. He suddenly shouted, "Boundless Saint! You son of a b*tch! What now? You don't dare to admit what you have done?"

The man in black shook as he turned around with vicious eyes. In the dark night, his eyes were like two sharp swords with cold light.

The cultivator laughed and said, “Sons of a b*tch like the Boundless Saint has always been shameless and sneaky flunky. Now that things are revealed, he actually doesn’t dare to admit his name. He truly is son of a b*tch!”

Ji Chengfeng asked the man in black to say “Boundless Saint is a son of a b*tch”, yet the man in black wouldn’t say it.

That seemed to be excusing himself, but actually accusing himself.

All of a sudden, the guys from the Sunlight Sect started to talk about “Boundless Saint is a son of a b*tch” all the time. It was catchy, and they spoke it loudly. They all felt it vented the anger in their chests.

They were literally abusing a master level cultivator in the world by calling him a son of a b*tch, yet he didn’t dare to retort... That was truly a cozy thing to do!

Besides, these men had just been humiliated, and they were filled with anger. Now that they had such a way to vent the anger. That was awesome!

They were getting more and more excited, so they talked louder

and louder.

While they were cursing, they kept noticing the reaction of that world famous monster.

The flame of anger in the man's eyes was getting stronger and stronger. It was full of killing!

Suddenly, it seemed he couldn't bear it anymore because he shouted in a deep voice, "You shameless pricks! How dare you humiliate the Boundless Saint like this. Die, all of you, die!"

He waved his hands in the air.

Suddenly, countless cold sparks lit up in the darkness.

Under the dim light of the stars, there seemed to be endless streams of silver strings in the sky as they all flashed.

"Watch out! Flying needles!"

Ji Chengfeng shouted out when the needles were just out. He warned all his people to be careful.

At the same time, his sword glowed. He and his sword turned into a light pillar that shone in the dark. As he stroke his sword, he seemed to be pinned in the air. He then disappeared in the light pillar. It was like a shining dragon appearing in the night sky,

moving fast towards the man in black on the roof with compelling vigor!

- Tang, tang, tang... -

Countless needles were hit off.

Those guys of the Sunlight Sect were all superior cultivators. They were surprised but didn't panic when they faced the flying needles in the sky. They worked together and became sword lights here and there, hitting off one needle after another.

However, the needle rain was too dense, and two of them were hit by the needles. They were both hit on the arms. When the needles got into their arms, they seemed to be still alive. However, the needles stabbed into the arms and then kept drilling in. Suddenly, the two of them were stricken by extreme pain. They didn't take any reckless moves though. They just operated their martial art to seal the needles, and then they used their own spiritual power to stop the needles and then cut the skin on their arms to pull the needles out. They had just seen the needles when they shouted in anger, "Boundless Saint! As expected!"

...

Chapter 351: Lost His Mind

In fact, the man in black had moved away for no less than three hundred meters!

While the needles flew out, he had already moved out a hundred meters away with an extremely beautiful movement!

That was an extremely fast move within seconds.

Before the guys clearly saw what he did, he was already gone far. Seconds after, they could only see a dark dot in the sky. Another second after, they could see nothing in the sky at all. He was totally gone.

Because of that, Ji Chengfeng's strike hit empty air after he gathered the energy for such a long time.

There was actually such an extremely fast moving method.

The light pillar shook in the sky as it suddenly turned over. Ji Chengfeng shouted with hatred, "Boundless Saint! Where did you go!"

Apparently, Ji Chengfeng didn't want this to end like this. With the power of the mergence of him and his sword, he moved fast like a shooting star in the sky!

Ji Chengfeng was no better than that man in black on flying art, but he was now in the human-sword mergence mode. He used all the energy of it into speed. He could move times faster than he was capable of, so he actually was catching up with the man in black. Among the people of the Sunlight Sect, he was the only one who could manage to do it!

Ji Chengfeng had operated the human-sword mergence and he used the energy of it into speeding up himself. He thought that he could absolutely catch up with the man in black. Even though the man in black seemed to be extraordinarily powerful and he couldn't defeat him, there were lots of his men coming after. As long as he could slow down the man in black, when his people arrived, they could make an attack together. No matter how powerful that man in black was, and no matter how fast he was, he would be killed right there!

That was Ji Chengfeng's sweet plan. However, the man in black had his own thoughts. He would never let Ji Chengfeng's plan happen!

The man in black saw Ji Chengfeng actually got behind him. He was shocked, but that was all he felt. He then stroked his arms and moved forward faster. - Shoot! - He was boosting up. He was just like a sharp dark arrow shooting in the sky. While he was moving, he said, "Ji Chengfeng! You and you dogs in the Sunlight Sect will regret this! Like I said, I am not the Boundless Saint! You abused him like that. You will get what you deserve!"

As for now, he was still denying it!

He wasn't just denying it, he was even threatening him!

[What the hell is it?]

Ji Chengfeng was so exasperated that he nearly spat blood.

He realized that the man in black was able to boost up his speed, so he didn't dare to slack off. He didn't dare to talk either. Now he was trying to keep the speed by operating the energy from the human-sword mergence. If he opened his mouth, he would vent the spiritual qi, and if so, he wouldn't be able to catch up with that man. So he held it and kept chasing.

The other cultivators of Sunlight Sect were all after him trying their best.

The guys were divided into several groups because of their speeds. Ji Chengfeng was the first group, right after the man in black. The other eight cultivators were the second, as they moved faster. The rest were the third, as they move slow!

All of a sudden, there were many streams of blue lights in the sky that nearly lit up the entire sky in the night!

It showed everyone in the world that there were some Sky Origin Stage cultivators fighting in the sky!

In this mortal world, the Land of Han-Yang, let alone in a kingdom, it was nearly impossible to see so many Sky Origin Stage

cultivators fighting at the same time!

That was some marvelous scene truly!

In this chasing game, most of the guys couldn't manage to catch up to the man in black. Ji Chengfeng was the only one who stayed close to him, as he had the energy that was from the human-sword mergence.

They were just a hundred meters away from each other!

During the chasing, the man in black had changed many gestures of flying, and had also changed many routes. However, Ji Chengfeng just didn't give up. He kept the energy running inside him and didn't get left behind a bit!

The guys behind him were much slower, but they kept going to the point where the light pillar shined. They didn't need to tell the directions. All they had to do was to follow that light pillar. As long as Ji Chengfeng didn't lose the target, the others would eventually get to them. It was just a matter of time.

The men of the Sunlight Sect could catch up with the man in black, and Ji Chengfeng was quite close to him all the time. In had been just a few minutes when they already left the eastern part of the city, and they were about to get into the center of the Chen-Xing City.

If they went a little bit north, they would reach the royal house.

The chasing had drawn many attentions.

It was a difficult thing not to notice some Sky Origin Stage cultivators fighting in the sky after all.

The man in black found that those men were so determined, so he gritted with his teeth and shouted, “Ji Chengfeng, you idiot! I told you I am not him! Why the f*ck do you keep chasing me!”

Ji Chengfeng knew that he was trying to get him talking.

If he talked, the spiritual qi he kept in his dantian would get away.

That would remove the human-sword mergence from him right away.

If he opened his mouth, he would never be able to catch up with the man, as he was the powerful sneaky Boundless Saint!

That was a sure thing.

Thus, he kept his mouth shut tight, making no sound at all. He forcibly kept himself in the human-sword mergence mode and kept moving!

In fact, he was astonished.

[So he is powerful, the Boundless Saint!

I have merged myself with my sword and I used all the energy in boosting myself. I should be twice faster than I can be. Even so, I still cannot really make it any closer to him, let alone catching up with him!

I am afraid I truly am not his match.

They call him the world's most terrifying demon lord. That is no exaggerated words!]

In fact, if it was in normal days, Ji Chengfeng would have stopped long ago. He wouldn't dare to chase up anymore.

Because even if he caught up, it would be a tough fight for him. He really had no better odds to win the fight. Just looking at how good the man in black was in flying, Ji Chengfeng knew he shouldn't be confident about fighting him.

However, now he had lost his mind already.

...

Chapter 352: Curse You

First they got humiliated in the auction, and then they were kicked by Wan of the Clouds. Ji Chengfen felt that he was nearly exploded with anger.

Unexpectedly, this Boundless Saint got to them. They were humiliated again!

Ji Chengfeng felt that it would be easier to just kill himself than accept it!

It would be much faster and better!

[We can't mess with the House of the Chaotic Storms. Fine. Can't we fight back against you, the Boundless Lake then?]

Boundless Lake was the top terrifying killing force in the world—an assassination organization. They were strong, and it would be tough to fight them.

In normal times, Sunlight Sect would never dare to fight them like this.

However, it was a special situation though. The guys of the Sunlight Sect were all provoked, so they were determined for it!

They didn't care whether it would be easy or tough anymore.

They thought the Sunlight Sect had the power, so they fought!

Staring at the figures flying in front, Ji Chengfeng had one thought in mind.

[You go up, I will follow you to the heaven! You go down, I will follow you to the bottom of the ocean! Wherever you go, I won't give up!]

The man in black shouted while he moved, "Stop, you bastard... I told you. You are mistaking me..."

Ji Chengfeng was pissed!

[You are the world's demon lord. You rule the world, yet you actually act like this. Can't you just admit what you have done?

I truly look down upon you on this!]

He felt furious and he got bold. While he prepared to boost up again, suddenly, the roof of a house collapsed. - Boom. - The man in black disappeared along with it.

Ji Chengfeng knew that things went wrong. He couldn't stop the boosting power from the human-sword mergence, since he had put all the energy into his speed. It was difficult to stop. He flew pass the house like lightning. He hurriedly stopped the human-sword mergence, went through the collapsed roof, and discovered a crossroads of two alleys.

The alleys were connected to all east, west, north and south—the four directions. The alleys were empty.

He couldn't tell where the man in black went.

He actually lost him here!

Ji Chengfeng was an experienced man after all. He had a quick reaction. He shouted and then his blue sword light erupted to the sky. He had been standing in the air of sixty meters height. He stayed still and looked down to the ground. Apparently, he was trying to find the trace of the man in black.

It was the best way to do so under such circumstances. No matter where the man in black went, he wouldn't be able to get out of his sight within such a short time.

However, all he could see was empty places. It was silent everywhere. There wasn't even a mouse, let alone any people.

The night was dark and silent.

The empty street was full of light fog, like it was the path to hell.

It was full of terror.

At this moment, sounds of clothes flicking the air came after

him. The guys of the Sunlight Sect arrived.

A man just sneered on them, looked down upon them, humiliated them, and even killed one of their Sky Origin Stage cultivator, yet they lost the man after chasing him for such a long time!

Sweat came down from Ji Chengfeng's forehead as his eyes became sharp. He looked around. He was not resigned to the reality. His right hand held the sword tight as his entire body was covered by killing intent!

After a while, he was eventually convinced. He had lost the trace of the man in black. He felt the flame of anger was raging in his chest, so he shouted to the sky, "Boundless Saint! Come out! Come out!!"

The shout was like a thunder that everybody within a dozen miles heard it!

Ji Chengfeng looked around. It was still silent. Apparently, the man in black would never show up to him again.

After a long time, Ji Chengfeng held a breath from his dantian and spoke with spiritual qi, "What? Boundless Saint, you are too scared to come out?"

"You are such a coward?"

He shouted for the last time with his last stream of strength!

It sounded like endless thunders striking the sky. It was much louder than the first shout!

- Shoot! Shoot! Shoot! - The guys of the Sunlight Sect all landed beside him.

They looked at each other and knew that they had lost the target!

[No wonder the Elder is so angry. He actually shocked the world, regardless of his own dignity, to force the Boundless Saint to show up again!]

A man among them hated the Boundless Saint and he had bad temper, so he started to curse, “Boundless Saint, you son of a b*tch! Come out! World’s demon lord my ass! You are just a coward! Pathetic! Son of a b*tch Boundless Saint! You don’t even dare to come fight us! You motherf*cker! You better got guts son of a b*tch!”

It exactly started the farce.

Suddenly, several of the others started to curse loudly.

“Son of a b*tch Boundless Saint! Come on out!”

“Boundless Saint, you son of a b*tch! Are you coming out or not!”

“Are you too afraid to show yourself, Boundless Saint the son of a b*tch? You don’t want to show up? Fine. I will make you do! You f*cking shameless dog!”

“You son of a b*tch, Boundless Saint. Well, he doesn’t dare to show up. Coward he is! It is humiliating b*tches to call him son of a b*tch. Would a b*tch even want to have a son like him?”

“That doesn’t make sense, does it? Boundless Saint is a f*cking dog. Dogs are bold. He shouldn’t be so cowardly.”

“No, no, no. His mother might be a dog, but he is actually a son of a b*tch. B*tches are cowardly, that’s why he is a coward too! That is why he doesn’t dare to show up!”

“Well this son of a b*tch Boundless Saint is a bastard then?!”

“You are damn right! He is son of the dog and the b*tch!”

“Boundless Saint you son of a b*tch. You are worse than a bastard! Come on out you!”

...

Over a dozen Sky Origin Stage cultivators were cursing at the same time. What a scene!

How extraordinary!

They wanted the Boundless Saint to hear it, so they all shouted with spiritual qi in dantian. When they shouted, every sound they made could spread ten miles away. That really shocked the Chen-Xing City!

All of a sudden, the center of the Chen-Xing City was like a food market that was run by some Sky Origin Stage cultivators. Their sounds came one wave after another as it spread to the entire city!

It was quite close to the royal house as mentioned earlier.

The king in the royal house also heard the cursing at the moment!

...

Chapter 353: Curse

The king was certainly displeased; it was quite annoying to be disrupted when sleeping. He then noticed that the sound came from somebody that the royal power could not control. He looked more carefully and found many Sky Origin Stage cultivators shouting in the sky, and some of them were even glowing dark blue light that was like ocean. They were grandmaster level cultivators of the Sky Origin Stage!

[Their martial arts are so similar to each other, so they should be in the same sect. There is actually such a powerful sect in the world?!]

The king was angry, but he could only bear it, as he knew they had overwhelming power to him.

In the Kingdom of Chen, the king was the one who held absolute power. However, when he faced with some super power, he was just like ordinary people. At the moment. the guys were the super powers that he didn't want to face!

Those men were apparently crazy. They completely went mad, otherwise, they wouldn't be shouting and hanging around the royal house. The king wondered what made them so.

If he went to interrupt them, they might vent their anger at the royal house...

Then the royal house might be ruined. Even not entirely, at least

a huge part of it!

Destroying the buildings was fine, but as for the lives it would take... The king had given too much to recruit his Sky Origin Stage cultivators. He just couldn't let them die in it!

That would be such a severe consequence.

Most importantly, the king knew that even if all his martial forces fought together, they could barely defeat those men!

Thus, although the king was so furious that his face turned green, he couldn't do anything. He couldn't suppress the anger in his chest.

He kept cursing in his mind, [Son of a bxtch the Boundless Saint! You have made such a big trouble, and you drew it to my place! You could just go to any other place. I don't care. What a son of a bxtch! Those men do not call him wrong! I want to go out and shout at him! I want to call him son of a bxtch loudly. Fxcking prick...]

At the moment, there were many people who gathered to see it. Most of them were superior cultivators in the martial world!

They heard the noise, and they just looked at it. They didn't dare to get any closer too.

It was quite far away, but it was clearly heard. They heard those

men cursing and felt curious, also hilarious. They just couldn't stop laughing.

The Boundless Saint was known as the No. 1 demon lord. Everybody knew it. Nobody dared to mess with him face to face.

Let alone to curse him loudly in front of the public.

The language they were using was rough, and they made it too broad.

However, it was quite delightful to watch a bunch of Sky Origin Stage cultivators in a cursing fight.

Some experienced men who had seen a lot actually recognized some of those men.

“What the hell! Aren't they people of the Sunlight Sect? Isn't it Ji Chengfeng there? Oh...”

“That's right. They are.”

“What is going on? How did the Boundless Saint mess with the Sunlight Sect? Why do they have to keep cursing him? They should be in a rather gentle relation. How come they got into such a fight'?”

“It is quite a strange situation, but at the same time, it is quite

normal. Think about it. There is no other sect who dares to curse the Boundless Saint like this in the world, except the Sunlight Sect.”

“There must be something behind this. It should be something serious...”

“Look at the Sunlight Sect people. They act like their ancestors’ tombs were dug out...”

“Maybe the Boundless Saint took someone’s wife...”

“Hmm. Maybe... Well, it is very possible!”

“Well, while those kind of men are fighting, we moral people should better step far away enough. Safety first...”

“Absolutely. Safety first.”

...

They talked and talked, and they moved a bit further for real, however, no one would like to leave. [Are you kidding? It is very possible that this the only chance I have in my entire life to see this. Wouldn’t it be too much a shame to leave?]

“Shut up! All of you!”

At this moment, a vicious and ghostly voice sounded with flaming anger in it.

It came right from the House of Zuo, which was beside the royal house.

A dark shadow came up. A man in black robes, with black clothes covering his face, showed his cold and ruthless eyes in the sky. He was like an illusion, but he was definitely real.

He was flying closer to the people of Sunlight Sect.

His eyes looked like there were fire burning as he spoke coldly, “Ji Chengfeng, you Sunlight Sect really have balls! How daring you are...”

When the real Boundless Saint finally showed himself, the fake one didn't really feel so good about it though. He was suffering extreme mental pain, but it wasn't because of self-reproach. It was...

Ye Xiao was hidden in a corner with his back on the wall. He tried so hard to keep himself in the shadow, and he felt like his heart was beating out from his mouth.

He wasn't feeling bad about what he did though. He was just tired!

He was exhausted!

How could he not be. Ye Xiao was just at the junior levels of the Sky Origin Stage. He was chased by over a dozen Sky Origin Stage cultivators, with some of them in the master ninth level, and he had to act like he was dealing with it casually...

That was certainly some exhausting thing to do!

In fact, he was moving quite fast, like wind and lightning, because of his One Laughter in Skyline. He was absolutely faster than those men of the Sunlight Sect, and he could be moving in a beautiful way.

That was why Ye Xiao was so confident about it. Only Ye Xiao could complete such mission. Ning Biluo might be stronger than him in cultivation, but he was never better than Ye Xiao in acting like the Boundless Saint.

Not everyone could use needles.

It wasn't quite following his plan though. Ye Xiao had gone too far in teasing those men. He did make them angry, as planned, but he also made them chase him like crazy. Ji Chengfeng actually operated his human-sword mergence, and he even used all his energy on that. He was moving twice faster than he should be.

Ye Xiao was better than all of them in flying martial art, but he was not twice better than them. As Ji Chengfeng burst into a fast mode, Ye Xiao wasn't in advantage anymore. The distance between them would only get closer and closer.

Ye Xiao made a quick decision at that moment. He operated all the cultivation power and also the spiritual qi from the Boundless Space to boost himself. It forcibly boosted him so that he could keep the distance with Ji Chengfeng.

...

Chapter 354: Depressed Boundless Saint

During the chase, Ye Xiao seemed to have the upper hand. It seemed he was dealing with it leisurely. He even made sounds to disrupt the enemies, and he looked so confident.

Nobody knew that while he was doing those things, he was using up all his power!

When he finally rushed to the royal house, he was totally exhausted. He could only find a place to hide himself as soon as he could.

After the death race, he clearly felt the difference between the third level and the ninth level of the Sky Origin Stage!

When he operated the One Laughter in Skyline, he felt so proud, but never knew that he would be pushed into such an embarrassing situation!

That was unbelievable!

It was three times the usual speed!

Ye Xiao had planned to take them again when he got further away, but he ended being chased so close that he didn't even have time to look back on them.

He was thinking about flying further and rushing into the House of Zuo. That would be a perfect ending to his mission.

However, he couldn't make it anymore.

In the dark corner, Ye Xiao tried his best to suppress his heartbeat and his breath. Terrible feeling kept rising up on him like tides.

He wanted to cough and take a deep breath, and he also wanted to sit on the ground...

His legs were shaking and he couldn't help it. Blood was rushing up to his brain as he felt a little dizzy. He was still standing still there.

Even though his heart was beating wildly, his breath was gentle, soft and flat.

[That was so close. It has gone way beyond my plan...] Ye Xiao thought, [But it is also fine to make it here. The Boundless Saint should be able to hear them, right? Listen to their shouts. I don't think he will just let them shout!]

When he heard that creepy voice sound up, he finally felt relieved.

He nearly fainted. [My god! Finally done!]

It finally succeeded!

I can be relieved now.

The Boundless Saint showed up already. All that I did, being chased like that, running like crazy while risking my life, it is not in vain.]

...

The Boundless Saint was filled with anger and depression at the moment, and nobody knew it. His emotions gathered along and became like an erupting volcano.

There was actually such a thing in the world!

Ridiculous!

Indescribable!

Unbelievable!

What was it then?

The Boundless Saint was enjoying his leisure moment while hiding in the House of Zuo. He invited his two assistants to join

him with drinks.

As an assassin, especially a top-class one, it was extravagant to have a drink.

Assassins had to stay sober all the time. They could not even have a little bit of emotional fluctuation in mind, as it might lead to their failure in missions. They might even lose their lives in the failure! It might cause them to make a mistake in the blink of an eye.

Alcohol was the reason to many mistakes.

It would be boring if one didn't get drunk when drinking. It was the feeling of daze that excited people.

However, to get drunk was the same as to get oneself killed for assassins!

But life without drinks was boring.

The assassins in the Boundless Lake were all eager for drinks because they had been restrained strictly from it by the Boundless Lake. Boundless Saint set a rule that everybody could only enjoy drinks for no more than one time in a year!

Moreover, whoever stayed together couldn't all get drunk!

That meant if three of them went for drinks and they all hadn't used the chance yet, only two of them could be drunk, while the other should be sober to guard them.

No one was beyond the rule.

Whoever violated it died!

No excuses; no mercy!

At this night, the Boundless Saint thought that there was nothing to be minded. Things would only happen after three days, or even seven days.

He was quite sure there was nothing to worry about. He was staying in the most prosperous city in the world, Chen-Xing City, so he felt like to have a couple of drinks.

So he discussed with the assassins who came along with him: "Maybe we should use the only chance to drink in this place? We can have some good drinks and adjust our emotional status, also to prepare ourselves for the busy times to come several days later."

Who would say no to the Boundless Saint's suggestion? Besides, it was quite an attractive plan.

Those assassins had been thirsty for drinks for a long time. They dribbled when they heard the word. They nodded and the dribbles on the mouths were swinging. It was such a wonderful thing to do

to get drunk in this prosperous place.

After a long time of discussion and fights of word, under the pressure of powers, there were two of the seven assassins who could use their chances to drink with the Boundless Saint.

The five assassins who couldn't make it were annoyed. [Why do we have to just watch? What a chance to drink! Isn't it alright to just have one person staying awake?]

The Boundless Saint burst in anger because of such an idea, "It is a special period of time! We are in the Chen-Xing City! We have a mission to complete!"

Special plan in special time!

It was necessary to have five of them staying awake.

Under the depressed eyes of the five assassins, the lucky other two and the Boundless Saint were enjoying the food and the drinks on the table. It was quite a feast. There were over a dozen dishes on the table. The man who went to buy drinks actually brought thirty jars of liquor!

It was five kilogram in one jar!

That was one hundred and fifty kilograms of Maiden Red that was sixty years old!

It was the best liquor that could be found in the market in the city!

Each jar was sold in a price of three thousand taels! No bargaining was accepted!

The sixty years quality of the Maiden Red was no ordinary thing. There was five kilogram in the jar, but in fact, most of the liquor was in paste. That was the distillate of the liquor. It was rather precious. It made people drunk by only a smell of it. It should be blended with water before anybody drank it. Other than the Maiden Red paste, there was also a tiny bit of Maiden Red liquid. That was even beyond the paste. Ordinary people could get themselves killed by tasting it. To blend it with water was not enough. It should be blended with other kinds of liquor so that it could be neutralized.

The culture of liquor only existed for ordinary people though. For Boundless Saint and his assistants, or other people who were around their levels, it barely meant anything.

...

Chapter 355: Absolutely Irreconcilable!

When the liquor of the Maiden Red was poured out from the jar, it wasn't a lot, but it was extremely dense. The color was like amber, charming and pretty. When the liquor was poured into the bowls, the aroma was lingering around the air and spreading away.

It seemed like the entire city was drunk at this night...

The other five assassins just sat outside the door. They kept sniffing.

They made sounds.

They could feel themselves out of control because of the thirst when they just smelled the aroma.

They couldn't drink, yet they had to stand there smelling it. It was such a supreme quality liquor. That was an extreme torture to them!

The Boundless Saint was in a good mood that he hadn't have for a long time. He had a couple of drinks and the taste was still lingering in his mouth. He felt like walking on air. He felt himself a few years younger, and the world seemed to be better for him. It was absolutely some hard-earned emotion for an assassin!

That was why he enjoyed it very much.

Even though he was the leader of his people, he had to set himself an example to others. That was why he cherished the only chance that he had in a year. He drank a lot and was immersed in the pleasure.

He was chilled.

He was happy.

He was... comfortable...

While he was just enjoying it, suddenly ,somebody kept shouting outside with a world-shocking voice, “Boundless Saint! Come out! You come out!”

Boundless Saint and his assassins were stunned when they heard that voice!

[What happened?

What is it?

I am having my drinks here. I don't remember I have messed with anybody. Why would he call my name...]

Before he could realize what was going on, the shout sounded again, “What? Boundless Saint, you are too scared to show yourself?”

“You just cannot take responsibility for what you have done?”

Boundless Saint knew that something went wrong.

But he just didn't want to go out.

[Who do you think I am? Should I just go out there because you tell me to?

I am having a good time today. I don't want to ruin it...]

So he just sat still.

It was not a normal thing that the Boundless Saint wanted to patch up a quarrel by bearing the anger.

It was true that he didn't want to show himself or mess with anybody at the moment, but those guys didn't share the same opinion.

A voice sounded, “Boundless Saint! You son of a bxtch!”

When that word came out, the eight top assassins, including Boundless Saint himself, all emitted flames of anger through their eyes at the same time!

The overwhelming aura of killing!

[What the hell! For all these years, this is the first time somebody called me with such terrible words!]

However, soon they would know that this was not the most terrible one.

What happened next was that they continued the cursing with more and more terrible words. There were more than one of them cursing at the same time. The sound was shocking the night sky.

“Boundless Saint is the son of a bxtch!”

Everybody in the capital knew about it now. It kept lingering around people’s ears without stop...

Boundless Saint was furious!

[What the fxck!

I only have this very day to enjoy a happy moment!

I am staying so quietly having drinks. Finally, I am not killing or on the way to kill anybody. Why would this bunch of bastards keep calling me with those terrible words?!

What wrong have I done to you? Why would you curse me like that?]

Boundless Saint kicked away the table and hurriedly rushed out!

He had made up his mind!

No matter who it was, whoever dared to curse him like this would have his most excruciating punishment!

[After this insult, if I don't show up and put an end to it, wouldn't I be laughed by everyone in the world? If I don't kill all these bastards, how can we, the Boundless Lake, be walking in the martial world?

How can we still be respected in the martial world?]

- Shoot! - He rushed out. The next moment, his robe was fluttered in the air as he stood in the sky. He rapidly flew forward for hundreds meters, and then he saw those people who were lively cursing.

He barely thought before he rushed over to them.

If he didn't drink anything, he might be watching them in the dark and then making a surprise attack. However, he had drunk a few cups of quality Maiden Red at the moment, so he felt that he was invincible now. How could he let others curse him like this?

He rushed to the crowd and stayed behind them. He spoke with vicious voice.

The depressed anger was no longer suppressed.

Ji Chengfeng turned around and looked at Boundless Saint again. He smiled with disdain. “What? Have you gone mad now? Can’t bear it anymore, can you? Why not just keep being a coward? Aren’t you just enjoying it? Finally showing your coward head now, ei?”

Boundless Saint took in a deep breath and he suddenly shouted.

The shout even shocked the sky!

- Boom! -

The next moment, he spoke with a dark face, “Sunlight Sect is indeed a great sect. Look how many superior cultivators you have. You are so powerful. Heh, heh... Maybe my Boundless Lake is just too small to be respected in your eyes?”

He spoke word by word, “You curse me so flagrantly in front of the world. What do you, Sunlight Sect, want exactly? Challenge? Insult?”

Ji Chengfeng blandly spoke, “Boundless Saint, just cut the crap. I

don't care if you would show up again tonight or not. I don't care if you want to be a coward all your life. We will never let you go!"

Boundless Saint spoke in a wicked voice, "Hmm? So you people of Sunlight Sect are all so eager to die?"

A man of the Sunlight Sect shouted, "Boundless Saint! You son of a bxtch! Curse you? Yes, I did. So what? Why don't you just keep being a coward like you did? Did your dirty mum encourage you? Hahahaha... I think I was right. You must have the guts from a dog! That is why you are so fearless now. Aren't you? Hahaha..."

People beside him laughed along with him. "So he is. Hahahaha..."

Sunlight Sect never truly respected assassination associations like the Boundless Lake, as they thought sects like them were the only decent forces. What happened tonight had driven them mad already. Whatever came out of their mouths wouldn't be anything good.

Things were clear to them. They never thought that there was anything that needed to be explained!

Boundless Saint was filled with anger this moment. What had happened was somebody cursing him behind his back, yet now they were cursing him face to face. There was no room for negotiation anymore.

Nobody said anything about the reason; they just kept saying terrible words to hurt each other since the two sides met. Now they were doomed to be enemies!

...

Chapter 356: Dead End!

Boundless Saint was furious. He wickedly smiled and then he quickly moved aside. - Boom! - The entire place was filled with sorrow and horror. Endless dense fog rose up from all sides before it suddenly covered the entire sky!

The fog spread away. It was growing. Everything inside the fog looked like hell all of a sudden. Boundless Saint entered the fog quickly while he was laughing, leaving no trace behind.

His voice obscurely resounded, “You all want to die, don’t you? Let me help you. Come get me...”

Ji Chengfeng felt that things must have gone wrong.

When Boundless Saint disappeared in the fog, Ji Chengfeng smelled alcohol.

It was the smell of some old Maiden Red!

He had been with the man in black for just a while, but he remembered that there was no smell of alcohol in that man in black!

However, this man carried the smell of Maiden Red!

He thought about it and realized that what this man was doing

now was exactly how the Boundless Saint he knew would do! Especially the fog...

[Would it be... a mistake?

Have we been set up?]

Ji Chengfeng had such a thought. It went through his mind for an instant, but he already figured out what the truth really was. At this moment, his face turned dark.

[If it truly is a mistake, if we made such a mistake, this is going to be real nasty for us!

We are messing with a super powerful figure at the moment. We are making him an enemy to us. He is not an easy one to defeat. Even if we do take him down, we would be severely wounded for sure! That is just a bigger loss!

What is all this for? What a stupid loss we are having!]

Thinking about this, Ji Chengfeng hurriedly shouted, “Boundless Saint, please stop! We Sunlight Sect never do sneaky things. We have to put things clear. There are reason for what we are doing now. I have thought about it and I found things might be wrong. There might be a mistake between us. If we fight against each other because of a mistake, it won’t be a good thing for both of us!”

Boundless Saint’s voice came over from the fog, “Mistake? What

mistake? I mistake you for a bunch of motherfxckers? You insulted me in front of the world. You did it. Yet now you are telling me it is a mistake? Does it look like a mistake to you really?"

He made a harsh laugh and said, "Look. If you don't dare to come and get me, I am going to kill you now. Why don't you go discuss about the mistake when you're all together in the hell!"

Suddenly, killing intent rushed up to the sky.

In that spreading mass of fog, the figure of Boundless Saint showed up here and there indistinctly. He really was like a ghost. While the fog spread, it covered a bigger and bigger area, and it also turned denser and denser. It felt like no end of it. The superior cultivators who had been watching this could no longer see through it.

If they stayed where they were, they would be covered soon!

Cold lights flashed; needle rain everywhere.

Boundless Saint had made his strike. He was determined to kill!

The sixteen cultivators of the Sunlight Sect shouted together and defended together! And they fought back!

Not far from them, there were seven shadows rushing into the fog like ghost with lightnings. They were so quiet. They were like swords hidden in the fog. They stroke silently, with sharp aura of

killing!

There were one saint master, two saint vice-masters and five golden label assassins striking at the same time!

The fight began!

It was just within a second, and the two sides were already in a drastic fight!

At this moment, no explanation was needed.

Even if they knew there was a mistake, even if they knew somebody had set those guys up, it wouldn't stop the fight. They were determined to kill!

Sunlight Sect couldn't bear the insult, nor could the Boundless Lake!

It was the head of the Boundless Lake, the Boundless Saint himself who was insulted!

Mistake?

So what?

They were now in opposite positions. All they could do was to

fight!

Maybe it would only end when either side all died!

Even though it was a mistake, it could only be clarified by death and blood now!

Suddenly, endless blue lights lit up the firmament. The Sky Origin Stage cultivators of both sides all operated their extreme power to kill in the fight!

Ji Chengfeng sighed. All he could do was to spirit up and fight!

Words were useless at the moment.

In a corner far from the battle, hidden in the shadows, Ye Xiao was watching the fight among those top cultivators in the Land of Han-Yang. He couldn't help sighing. It was really a wonderful scene.

“They are indeed the top cultivators in the world... Amazing... Look how they fight. So powerful... Superior cultivators are different. They just don't like talking. I like these cultivators who only follow the rule of power. Whoever has the stronger fist speaks louder...”

“Oh, I really want to go on watching them. I wonder who would win this battle. But I have something to do. It is more important. I have to leave... What a shame... I am going miss this great fight...”

He sighed while shaking his head, and then he vanished in the dark...

...

When the fight was just started.

Something was happening in the Qing-Yun Hostel.

There were over six hundred people gathered together from the five noble clans.

They were all in a worried look.

Things were bad for them.

They got the supreme dan beads for sure, but they couldn't leave now.

They were watched by the two great sects. They just didn't dare to do anything.

Whoever recklessly left the city would become the target. They would be taken down as a sample.

In fact, the five noble clans had sent several men out the city the

day before. However, they died after only ten miles away from the city. That was clear...

The two great sects didn't even allow anybody to leave, not even without the dan beads!

They were apparently trying to vent the anger they got from being insulted by the House of the Chaotic Storms!

They also wanted to get the supreme dan beads that they couldn't have in the auction.

They wanted to get the supreme dan beads without spending a penny, and others would get killed because of it.

That was so unreasonable!

Whoever had the bigger fist talked louder. That was what the world was like. The House of the Chaotic Storms had the biggest fist, so the two great sects could only bow to them. Same thing how the noble clans had smaller fist than the two great sects, so they could only obey them!

...

Chapter 357: Never Surrender

“What is your plan now?” A middle-aged man of the Long Clan spoke with a solemn face, “The situation is clear now. It has taken us dozens of men’s lives to test the two great sects’ purpose. Thing will only get worse if we let it go as it goes... It is everybody’s crisis this time. Nobody can escape! We should all give our opinions, suggestions. Let’s figure out a solution to get through this crisis.”

People in the room all became silent when he said it.

They all knew that it was true, but they just couldn’t think of any practical solution!

They were all angry, but in their eyes, there was only desperation. They truly didn’t have any idea how to deal with it!

They were elites of their clans. They were the top cultivators that were sent to the Chen-Xing City this time. They were all Sky Origin Stage cultivators, who were qualified enough to sit in this room!

However, they just couldn’t have a way to defend from the two great sects. They were just too strong.

“This time, we are truly hopeless.” An old man sighed and said, “If we fight together, maybe we could defeat them in this city, but what would happen after this fight would be nothing we can afford. We can’t just sit here waiting, yet we can’t take any step forward. We may be able to remove the stone that block our way,

yet what hides under it is something we cannot mess with.”

Everyone nodded to agree.

It was true.

If it was just a fight, they wouldn't be scared. If it was just some normal martial world grudges, they wouldn't be afraid.

The worst situation would just be death.

They were half of the most powerful people in the clans of the Land of Han-Yang. They wouldn't be scared of anything about fights!

However, they had their concerns. They were usually not absolutely free. They all had their responsibilities!

When a brave man died, he no longer needed to worry about anything.

However, the problem was that even if they died, their families would get killed too!

Maybe some thousands years old clan would be vanished just because of their boldness.

Nobody could take that risk!

The problem concerned the prestige of the two great sects. No matter what, anything that concerned prestige would be extremely complicated and difficult to be solved.

They were after all the two great sects in the Land of Han-Yang, that had been in the highest position for a long long time.

People of the five clans all cursed in mind, [You want your prestige. Don't we want ours?] However, they only dared to say it in mind. They never dared to say it out.

They knew the great sects wanted prestige, and they knew they had bigger fists.

That was something they couldn't help!

This was a world that bigger fists made the call!

They surely had big fists too, but the great sects had bigger ones. That was all. They had been living for thousands of years, but this time. they met someone who had bigger fists than them!

“The only way that can save our men and their prestige is that we have a conversation with them about the supreme dan beads we have. It will show our kind intention and also show us how much they actually want from us. Dan beads or money are just belongings. People is our basic power!”

The man from the Gongsun Clan said.

He had a dry-skin face and he was small.

The man from the Long Clan humphed and said, “Do you think I don’t know that? I have sent people to talk to them already.”

“What did they say then?” Everybody was curious.

It concerned the future of the whole event, and it concerned all their lives!

“The man of Starlight Sect said...” The middle-aged man couldn’t help to show anger on his face, and he felt ashamed too. He said, “They... They want all our supreme dan beads and each of our clans should give them five billion as compensation to them. Everyone who attended the auction should cut one of his arms. They also want us to swear to god in the names of our ancestors and children that we will never tell anybody what we saw in the auction...”

- Boom! -

Everybody burst!

They all burst in anger.

“Nonsense!”

“That is too much!”

“How could they ask for this?”

“How could they even say it!”

“What do they think of us? They think they can just do whatever they want from us? They treat us like nothing! Are we toys to them?”

“We can never agree to such things! Son of a bxtch!”

“The great sects are acting too over!”

They talked and talked. Everyone was filled with anger.

The middle-aged man, who was the leader of the Long Clan group, showed anger on his face. He spoke in a deep voice, “Everybody knows that we Eight Noble Clans have been living for thousands of years. We should be thrifty clans, but we are still weak. Even if we were in our perfect condition, we can do no better. Compared to the great sects, we are too weak.”

“We have spent a lot to get the supreme dan beads in the auction this time. You know why we want the dan beads so bad that we could spend everything for it.”

“First, we had difficulties to improve ourselves since thousands of years ago. Even though we really want to be stronger, it is impossible. Those sects that have seized the higher positions on us would never allow us to improve. The Bone Ablutionary Dan and Mai Connection Dan are our only hope for the thousands of years that can let us be stronger!”

People nodded with silence to agree.

They were having exactly the same thought.

“The rise of a clan needs genius disciples to break through their limits! In fact, it needs even more resources!” That man from the Long Clan spoke with his eyes lit up, “Our clans never lack geniuses for all these years, but we don’t have enough resources, quality resources! That is why when we reach a certain stage... we will stop improving. That is why we cannot defeat those from those martial sects.”

...

Chapter 358: Work Together

"For those big sects, when they are in a time that it is difficult to improve, they can solve the problem by simply a dan bead. We don't have the resources. There is nothing we can do."

There was sorrow on his face. "Generation by generation, we are restrained. We could have done nothing to help. No matter how big our ambition is, we have little capability. There are many of our predecessors who never had broken through the limit. Even though they had the most potential, they were just stopped there... It is our grief."

"Now, we finally have the supreme Bone Ablutionary Dan! We can have our children with the most potential get the bone ablution when they are born! They can be the most powerful men in the world! We also have Connecting Mai Dan and Limit Breaking Dan! It allows our people to break through their natural born limitation and become super master cultivators!"

"It is the hope for us the eight noble clans to rise! We spent so much to get these dan beads. Now the two great sects want to snatch them from us."

"They are trying to perish the hope of our future. They want us to keep living under their feet! They want us to look up to them all our lives and bear their humiliation all the time!"

"How could we agree to that?"

The middle-aged man from Long Clan spoke in a deep voice, "Giving out five billion, taking an oath, breaking our arms... These are all easy! That is, if they can let us leave safely with our dan beads. I, Long Tianyun can chop off my hands and feet, even give up my life to them! Five billion? I would give them ten! I will give it all, even if I need to borrow some! Whatever they want, I can accept it! I can bear the humiliation!"

"But they just won't!"

"They know what is most important to them."

"We are all in the eight noble clans. We have fought against each other for our own interests. Maybe our sons will fight against each other in the future, because of the power, the title. However, now, we are facing the same problem together!"

"We have to get through this! We have to!"

The man, Long Tianyun, decisively spoke, "So we have to work together. No matter what, we have to get through this!"

"Otherwise, all the men here, we will bury the bright future of all our clans! We have just seen the light ahead, we can't give up on it!"

After this, he turned silent.

However, the crowd burst into discussion.

"It's right. Brother Long is right. At this moment, we cannot give in to them. We cannot be selfish. No matter what, we have to bring the dan beads home!"

"Right! Long's words are reasonable. He has just pointed the direction to the bright future for us. It would be unforgivable to be selfish under this situation!"

"We all should try to figure out a way to get through this crisis."

"We have more people coming. They are now inside the Chen-Xing City. They are the three elders. They will give us a bigger chance, I guess..."

"Oh, we have our people coming too. But it is useless. No matter how many people we have, we don't dare to fight back... When the great sects get to us, surely, we can fight, as we have many superior cultivators from our clans. However, once we fight back, we are officially at war against them. We will become their first target in the future. That is something we cannot ignore."

"True. We can neither go forward nor step back. I don't know what to do now!"

"Can we... advance secretly by an unknown path?" a man said.

Everybody asked him, "How?"

"Well, like... We make it look like we are all staying here protecting the dan beads. In fact, a part of us... can be on the way back home with the dan beads?"

The man said.

"No way." Some of the people shook and spoke in disappointment, "We have thought about it before. It is not going to work. The two great sects have spread their spiritual minds to the entire city. Whoever walked out of the city will be under their watch. No matter who you are, if you carry a space ring, they will take it..."

"For now, no one can escape."

"If you put them in your clothes, you will never make it out of the city."

"Indeed."

Everybody was silent again.

All of a sudden, Long Tianyun gently spoke, "Maybe it is a practical way. We just need to compromise."

"How practical? How compromise?"

Everybody lit up their eyes to him.

At this very moment, every possibility was so important to them. Long Tianyun was known as a man with plans. They all thought that if he couldn't think of anything to save them, nobody could.

Now that he had an idea, that brought them hope.

"It is the same plan, but we need to act in several groups. One group stay in public, intentionally acting like they don't want to be noticed. They will draw the great sects' intention. The second group..." Long Tianyun thought and then slowly said, "The second group stay in the dark and never show up again."

"Hmm? Never show up again? What does that mean?" Everybody frowned.

There was excitement in Long Tianyun's eyes. Apparently, he was sure it was a good plan. In fact, he thought that it was the only way to solve the problem. He spoke with solemnness, "The first group, who will draw our enemy's attention, won't take any dan beads with them. They will surely be tortured and even be killed... After this group dies, the two great sects will go on searching the Chen-Xing City to find the other people and the supreme dan beads..."

"The second group that stay have to cover their names, their capabilities. They have to try everything they can to survive. They may need to settle down in this city. They are the people who have the supreme dan beads. They are the ones who carry our hope. Maybe they will need to stay here sneakily for ten, fifty or even a

hundred years. As long as they can let the dan beads be delivered to our clans, we win! Even if our men all die outside, as long as this group survives, as long as they still have the supreme dan beads, it is worth dying for!"

...

Chapter 359: I Heard It!

"As long as these dan beads can be taken back to our clans, it is worth all sacrifice!"

"Because that means our clans finally have hopes again! The hope for us rising again! We won't need to bow to any sects in the world!"

Long Tianyun's eyes lit up. He spoke word by word.

Everybody was silent after his words.

It was technically a practical plan.

However, a group of them have to face the two great sects.

They would have to be tortured and humiliated. They would suffer great pains!

Even though they wouldn't say anything and the two great sects couldn't get any answer from them, they would be killed for sure!

They would definitely get killed!

Furthermore, there must be some important figures of these clans to be in that group. They were all superior cultivators!

Otherwise, they would fail to draw any attention of the two great sects!

These superior cultivators should be conspicuous. It would absolutely not be easy for them to hide!

The sacrifice of these men was the only way out!

Nobody talked in the room. Some of them looked at here and looked at there.

Obviously, no one would like to die. Everybody wanted to be the one that stayed alive if possible...

Even though it would be a tough life, it was still life.

Who wouldn't want to live?

Surely none!

Nobody wanted to die, especially when they knew they could live.

Even those who knew that they were not good at hiding, they were still hoping to be in the "alive" group.

That was the same in everyone's mind!

"Why do you all hesitate... This is the only possible way to save our clans' future." Long Tianyun bitterly smiled and said, "Let me make it clear then. All of you, you can give up your sneaky thoughts now. I can assure you that whoever is here with me now is absolutely on the death list of the two great sects... So, none of us can be in the 'alive' group!"

"Only those who had never shown themselves in the auction are able to!"

Long Tianyun looked around at everybody's face with calmness in his eyes. He solemnly said, "Every selfish thought can damage our plan. It is our only way... I hope. You can make your decision quickly and make the arrangement before it is too late..."

He laughed with a hoarse voice. "Guys, we are in the same generation. We have fought against each other for many times. Now we are on the way to hell together. It is somehow a lucky thing to do."

He said it like it was a joke, but nobody laughed.

Whoever could still laugh must be without hearts!

In the room, it became sad and solemn.

Long Tianyun was being honest; he was telling the truth!

He was known as the wisest man in the eight noble clans, the clan master of the Long Clan. What he said now was simply the truth!

Nobody doubted it. Nobody would deny it!

They all have their own thoughts in mind. Everyone kept thinking about who could be the one that would survive for his clan... They knew they would all die except the chosen ones.

As they had such thought, they actually felt hope about it. Suddenly, they felt less fearful for death.

When a man thought through the difficulty in front of him, he would be scared of nothing. At least, they had hopes now. They would leave the seeds for their clans!

At this moment, a cold voice sounded, "Well... It is a practical way indeed. But... Now that I know it. Is it still practical?"

They were shocked, because this voice was so strange to them!

They quickly looked at each other and had a conclusion in mind. This voice belonged to someone who was not in the eight noble clans.

In other words, that was a stranger!

The clans were having secret meeting discussing about a way to lead them to a bright future. They had set a rigorous defense line around the place. Lots of superior cultivators were guarding this place, and it wouldn't be too exaggerated to say that even water couldn't flow into it and even flies couldn't get near them. However, a man sneaked in and he had been listening to them for the whole time. If he didn't say those words himself, nobody would notice him!

The biggest problem was that this man knew about their most important plan now!

"Who is it?" Long Yuntian had a fierce expression as he shouted.

"Me!"

The tough wooden door suddenly exploded. A man in black with mask on his face stood at the door like a spear. His eyes were cold. He looked at them and blandly said, "The clan master of the Long Clan surely is a wise man. You are indeed man with plans. You live at the present, yet you have planned the thousand year future of your clan. I was listening to it outside the door. To be honest, I am quite impressed. It truly is a good plan! Bravo!"

He sounded very strange. His voice was hoarse. Apparently, he had changed his voice so as to not let anyone to recognize him him.

Long Tianyun's eyes were filled with anger as he stared at this man in black. He held his hand up to stop his people from taking

any reckless moves.

He was a wise man. He always got to know the enemy before any fights. Others thought that they had to kill this man—in case he leaked their secret plan to the great sects—however, Long Tianyun had thought much deeper than them.

First of all, since the man dared to come alone and show up in front of them all, he must have a strong background!

He wouldn't come just to get killed!

He might have a perfect plan for this, or maybe he was just so good in martial arts, and he was sure he could defeat them all by himself.

He could hide outside the door listening to them without being noticed for so long. That meant he was no ordinary figure!

Second, the most important one, if he was an enemy, he could just leave without leaving a trace. As he could get in easily, surely, he could leave as easily. However, he didn't leave. He showed up to them. He was very possibly not quite close to the two great sects. If so, this man might become their support in this fight. If that was true, things would be better than they could think of!

...

Chapter 360: Who Are You?

Long Tianyun surely deserved the title of the wisest man in the eight noble clans. Within just seconds, he actually could think of such. He truly had a terribly good brain. They all stopped talking, and when Long Tianyun looked at that man longer, he sighed.

The man's eyes were filled with extreme confidence!

It felt like he only saw them like a bunch of chickens, weak and easy to defeat!

He was so confident, so it wouldn't be easy to ask him for help. Unless they offered him something truly valuable in return, he wouldn't do the favor, not even if they both shared the same purpose. Things were not so good on Long Tianyun's side!

"Since you have covered your face and disguised your voice, I guess you are a man that we are familiar with, right?" Long Tianyun blandly smiled. He reached out his hand and pointed at a nearby chair. "A guest, who we are familiar with, came to visit at night. Please come and have some tea."

While he was speaking, he was thinking, [Who is this guy?

He is not from the two great sects. I suppose?

If he is, he wouldn't need to mask his face!

Then who is he?

He showed up himself. Why cover his face?

It truly is hard to tell!]

"Don't bother." The man blandly smiled and said, "Clan Master Long, I showed myself this time and it shocked you all. I am sorry. I am just so interested in your plan. Since you all have devoted your lives for it, then why don't you just tell me the names of those in the surviving group, so that I can secretly take care of them for you..."

The guys were angry when they heard him. [We are going to die, but can you not say it out in front of us? It is not interesting! The names of them? Do you know how important they are to us? How can we tell you their names? What is wrong with you?]

Long Tianyun's face was calm, yet in his mind, he was hesitating. He thought that this man should be a friend, but he didn't seem like one. The first thing he said actually pissed them all. He even sounded like threatening them. Long Tianyun wondered if he finally made a wrong judgement.

He heard the man continued with a complacent laugh, "Do not doubt my sincerity. I do what I promise. At least I can make sure they won't be killed and just be dumped aside in the wild. Well, whatever I do, it costs some. Think of it as reusing waste. Look, imagine if they all get killed and all the supreme dan beads are gone. That is a great waste..."

The guys felt even more furious. The man was here for the supreme dan beads. He talked like he really wanted to help, but he was actually thirsty for the dan beads. That was disgusting!

Long Tianyun was totally certain that he had made a wrong judgement. And then he came up with a new thought.

"I guess you are not people of the great sects..." Long Tianyun's eyes looked cold. He blandly spoke, "However, all other sects got supreme dan beads... Besides, they all are just like us, hiding and trying not to be wiped out... Well then, I guess I have an idea about who you truly are."

The masked man in black blandly spoke, "Long Tianyun is indeed a wise man. At such a moment, you are still so calm. Even if you truly know who I am... so what? Is it that important to you?"

Long Tianyun smiled and said, "True. It is not important. Not really!"

The man in black blandly spoke, "Right. The important thing is that I know all about your plan. Most importantly, you can do nothing to me!"

Long Tianyun's eyes flashed. He blandly spoke, "Since you have guts to show yourself here, you surely will get away from us. But we do have a way to reveal your true identity! You must be people of Cyan Cloud Sect! Since you already showed up, why don't you just show us your face. Let me look at you. I wonder which of my

old friends would actually play such tricks on me!"

The man in black shook his head. "Long Tianyun, I thought you are truly a wise man, a clever man. How could you say such an unfriendly thing under such a situation? You know, what you just said may possibly ruin the future of all your clans?"

Long Tianyun stepped back. In his eyes was anger. He decisively spoke, "Things are how it is. There is no turning around. Clever or not, if we will die, we die with clear minds! Guys, let's do something to force him to show himself. Even if we all die today, he will be a company to us!"

Over twenty superior cultivators spread out and surrounded that man. The man was in the middle of them.

At the moment, those who were guarding outside came in to join them.

Under the surroundings, the man in black would never be able to get away!

There showed the flash of a sword light. A man of the Gongsun Clan attacked first. After him, there followed countless sword moves.

This man in black showed up and interrupted these guys' plan. Now their last hope was gone, so everybody hated that man.

"Let's work together, get him killed!" Long Tianyun seemed to recall something. His voice turned louder, "Since this man showed up, he has been playing tricks from the beginning. I reckon he must be alone today! He wants to take the dan beads on his own. If we kill him, our plan will still be available!"

The bunch of men were thrilled when they heard it.

It was quite right though.

No matter who that man in black was, if he had company, they would show up together! However, no one showed up.

Apparently, he was here alone!

As Long Tianyun said, if they killed this man, they still had the perfect plan. If not, everything was gone from them!

The man in black felt that those men were attacking more and more fiercely. He became slower. He waved his hand and a long narrow sword showed up in his hand. He swayed the sword and thousands of shadows and lights showed up. It was vigorous and fierce. He smiled and said, "Long Tianyun is truly clever. How admiring. However, do you think you can keep me here just with this lot of people? I dare to show up because I know I can safely get out of here!"

...

Chapter 361: Sowing Dissension

Long Tianyun didn't answer or take any moves. He just kept staring at the man in black.

Every move of the masked man in black was under his watch!

He was thinking about all this in mind. [I said he is from the Cyan Cloud Sect, but I am truly not so sure. His martial art, speed, moves, shape...

Who on earth... does he look like?]

He kept thinking about it, making conjectures.

[Obviously, the sword in his hand looks... inappropriate... His sword moves are overwhelming and powerful indeed, but there are some flaws during his movement. It actually feels so blunt.]

[The martial art that he is using... He moves so fast. His movements also seem to be inappropriate, like he is forcibly putting them all together... He is not using his own martial arts... He is simply holding it forcibly with his own powerful cultivation... Why?]

[Facing the encirclement of over twenty superior cultivators... Although they are not very powerful cultivators and not among the top figures in the Sky Origin Stage, it is after all over twenty cultivators fighting together. I don't think anybody dares to look

down upon them... But he is not using his real capability. Even so, he defended it all and he seems so casual about it.. There won't be many cultivators in the two great sects that can be as strong as he...]

[Maybe he is not from the Sunlight Sect or Starlight Sect...]

[According to all these, it should be easy to have some guess about this man. Why am I all blank in brain? Why is it?]

Long Tianyun thought so hard.

After a while, many people who had been guarding the place joined them. Over thirty men surrounded one.

Fighting against many people alone was a difficult thing for any cultivators in this man's level. It was rather more difficult for him... as he didn't want to reveal his true identity.

The masked man was strong and powerful, but it was getting worse for him. He seemed slower.

As the fight went on, the man in black was cut on the robe on his back because he was careless. If he wasn't that good, he could have received a fatal wound.

The man in black didn't make any fierce strikes yet, but his enemies had attacked him with strong hands. He was furious. He struck out with a palm and the guys were slowed down a bit. He

shouted, "Long Tianyun, do you really want me to kill here now? Do you think your men can actually fight me?"

Long Tianyun coldly spoke, "Will we survive even though you won't kill us? Do it or not, it is your business. We are definitely trying to take you down!"

He sounded so horrible. The guys heard his words and felt fiercer!

Since they were all trying so hard to take his life, death was not something that could not be avoided today. They just wanted to injure their enemy as much as they could!

The man in black laughed and said, "Come on, guys. Why do you all follow Long Tianyun's stupid lead? The plan he suggested is a good plan, but the surviving group has to survive. If anything bad happens to them, everything will be ruined! I am sure that even if the plan goes well, there will only be one clan of you who will get the supreme dan beads and improve greatly! Which clan will it be then? You are all smart men. You don't need me to say it out clearly, do you? Truth is ahead of you. Why do you all try so hard to end your own lives for others' interests! There is no way out for you, then why not come up with another!"

He successfully made the guys slower by saying such.

Long Tianyun was scared. He shouted, "Guys, do not believe this man. My plan is not perfect. It surely carries danger and risks. As long as we all stick together, there is a fifty percent chance to

succeed. We are all the same in this plan. We, Long Clan, have no secret plans. He is trying to sow dissension among us. If we don't take him down together now, our future will be ruined!"

They guys heard him and felt that he was right. They attacked the man in black again. He was again in danger!

However, the man in black coldly smiled again. "Did I lie? Like I said, it is a practical plan. That is for sure. But when all your clans start to arrange your own men, many of you may specially give orders to your own men... Something like this. There are people from other clans who are also carrying supreme dan beads. We are not the only clan... There are so many supreme dan beads in the Chen-Xing City..."

He laughed with a strange voice, "If you can survive, try everything you can to get the dan beads in others' hands. In the future, there will be no more eight noble clans in the Land of Han-Yang. There will only be the Long Clan!"

"When that day comes, we can have ten or twenty of our own marvelous cultivators because of the supreme dan beads. We can even wipe the other clans out and take all their properties. We will become a super sect in the world..."

The man in black spoke and laughed while dodging the attacks. He looked quite in danger, but he was always just close to death. He always escaped the attacks.

At first, he was talking about some clans. At the end, he was

specifically talking about Long Clan.

His words was like a powerful bomb falling down into the crowd! The men from eight noble clans were no more united. Their unity was blown into pieces by the powerful bomb!

They all looked different now.

Long Tianyun said with anger, "How can you slander us like that? How could I be such a kind of man?"

The man in black casually said, "Oh you are not? Maybe I was indiscreet?"

The men in the other clans showed a strange expression at the same time in their eyes, like they were saying "Aren't you?"

[Of course you are!

Did he lie?

Definitely not!]

Long Tianyun's face turned purple and his lips were shaking out of anger. "You... You evil, flagitious bastard! You are sowing dissension among us by slander!"

The man in black laughed with a weird voice. He said, "Didn't I say I was indiscreet? I think it will be interesting if I say something like this when you are making the arrangement. 'I came up with this idea. I just need to give them some hints'... Hahaha..."

...

Chapter 362: You Vile Man

"Well then, you can make a very close guess about who would be in the surviving group from the other sects... You know well about how to deal with those men..."

"You will say a lot to your man. These and these, those and those... I came up with the plan, so they must be trusting me the most. When you guys survive, we are already dead... No matter what you do, they won't know it."

"They won't know that this plan is for the great future of our great clan, Long Clan! They won't know that they sacrificed so much, including all their lives to protect the supreme dan beads, yet the supreme dan beads belong to Long Clan only! Hahahaha..."

The man in black impersonated Long Tianyun's voice. He laughed wildly. He didn't sound really like him, but it shocked everybody!

The last laugh of him was like a killing strike to them.

With one laugh, all weapons were down!

Everybody's face turned pale!

[That is true. If he does it like that, the Long Clan will be the only clan who gets all the benefits!]

It is Long Tianyun who suggested the plan. The other sects are all following him. We can never be foxier than him as he is a schemer.

If he set us up like this, we will lose everything!

The only clan who gets all benefits after it will be the Long Clan.]

The guys couldn't help thinking about it. They became slower in their attacks.

Somebody even thought, [Damn it. Long Tianyun is actually such a schemer. He actually suggested such a plan for their own interest. We nearly get hooked. Now we are actually still under your command, fighting against such a great fighter... The longer I fight, the more I feel like an idiot...]

At the moment, Long Tianyun was nearly spitting blood because of anger!

[Where does this bastard come from? Why is he so good at schemes? Maybe I will have that idea tomorrow or someday, but when I say that plan, I truly am just thinking about our common interest. I truly haven't thought about anything selfish...]

The joint forces was about to collapse. Long Tinayun gritted with his teeth and jumped out. While he was in the air, his long sword was out. "Lie! You schemer! I am not going to let you go today! Otherwise, the future of the eight noble clans will be ruined by you!"

Long Tinayun's words reminded everybody.

[No matter Long Tianyun have thought about that or not, he hasn't done it yet. Even if he did, he hasn't succeeded yet. The masked man in black, he is the knife that hang over our heads. Once he leaves this place safely, it will be no peaceful days in the future for all of us.

No matter whether the man in black is telling the truth or not, the most important and prior thing is to kill that man!

It is the only way to keep the plan a secret!

Now we know that the Long Clan may be thinking about something nasty, so we can take precautions.

When that day comes, what can the Long Clan do about it?

Surely, we will be prepared about it, and maybe we will take the Long Clan down instead!

Long Tianyun might be full of schemes and he can think of things that we cannot, but now the possible plan of him is revealed. If we still keep focus on him and let that man go, we are fools!

Humph. We didn't have time to dig deeper about it. Of course, they will do it. Who wouldn't?

We are all selfish. We all fight for our own interests!

Who will take the biggest advantage in the future is not decided yet.

However, no matter what, this man in black is our first task!

The secret can never be leaked out!]

Thinking about this, they began to desperately fight again!

They were determined to kill him!

Long Tianyun was indeed a clever man. Even though he was under big suspicion, he could still turn the situation around by a few words. He didn't talk much, but he had stated the logical connections of all. The fight went to another level because of him!

The masked man in black flew everywhere dodging the attacks. He was fleeing among swords and knives. He was still fine, but it was getting worse for him. He truly was under the encirclement. He had less and less room to dodge now. He knew things were getting worse, so he laughed. "Long Tianyun, well done! What a scheme! Only a few words to turn everything around! Admiring..."

While he was talking, an attack got to him quickly. He couldn't escape the attack of a sword, and it wounded his shoulder and he

bled on it.

It was the first time their attacks made him bleed. The guys saw it and was spirited up, so they were attacking more and more fiercely!

The man in black was hurt. He was furious. He angrily shouted, "You asked for it!"

He shook his body and emitted blue glow!

He finally used his real martial arts to fight back!

The man in black was covered by a dark blue light. Layers in layers, the light was spreading out gradually. His sword was swaying.

- Shoot! - There actually showed up a sword mountain that was shaped in a fan.

The sword mountain showed up in the air and then suddenly turned into dozens of sword breaths. - Shoot! - They all shot out!

Every sword breath was covered by blue glow, and there was a slight of red in it!

It seemed he was so angry because of getting hurt, so he made a fatal strike!

- Shoot shoot shoot... -

The five men who were closest to him moaned. They were wounded by the sword breath, and their blood splashed to the ground in the air like rain.

One strike, five wounded, all fatal!

Long Tianyun saw his overwhelming sword art, and his eyes widened. He felt pain and depression in his heart as he loudly screamed, "Sword Breath In Blood! You are the Heartless Sword, Situ Yu! Situ Yu, you Green Mountain Sect old bastard! You are pretending to be people of the Cyan Cloud Sect. You cunning prick!"

At the moment, there were several of the other cultivators who recognized him with his martial arts. They shouted in anger, "It is you!"

The man in black laughed with a hoarse voice. "You are mistaking me, really... I know you won't listen to me. It won't help for me to say more. Farewell!"

And then the sword mountain was a bit in mess. His long sword flew and made a turn. With a sound, a sword breath that was huge like a dragon showed up. The dragon was covered by colorful lights. It glowed in the dark night sky like a lightning shooting out rapidly.

It was a Human-sword Mergence!

Everybody tried to dodge away facing the prime level sword art in the cultivation world.

...

Chapter 363: Situ Yu?

If they tried to stop it, they would be hit by this overwhelming attack. If anybody was hit by it, his body would be smashed to pieces, and his soul would vanish too!

Although they were prepared to die, they didn't want to die now, not especially in such a miserable way...

Somebody died for nothing while somebody died for greater purpose. If they died now in this fight, they died for absolutely nothing!

The man in black made a good strike. The guys all moved aside. The encirclement was broken. He didn't look back, instead, he only rushed up to the sky. His sword emitted light and he disappeared after that light!

The cultivators were resting on the floor. They were heavily breathing after receiving such a great shock.

Long Tianyun's face turned green; he looked terrible. He stood there with his eyes full of terror.

"Is he truly Situ Yu?" somebody asked.

"Absolutely! Sword Breath In Blood! The sword glow is dark blue while there is red in it. There is only one man in the Land of Han-Yang who can do this! It is the Heartless Sword, Situ Yu from

Green Mountain Sect!"

It wasn't Long Tianyun who answered the question though.

It was an old man. This old man was known as the most retentive man in all clans.

He continued, "Situ Yu is a man with a girl's face. His face is like peach blossom. He went mad in cultivation once a few years ago. That ruined his cultivation. Some time after, he found the cultivation method of the Pink Demon. Because of that, his sword breath began to carry some pink color! That was the Pink Demon's special technique that he was well known for about a thousand years ago. There has never been no one else!"

"I see." Everybody got to know it.

That was why that man didn't want to use his real martial art. It would reveal his identity...

The old man looked at Long Tianyun with a complicated expression in his eyes. It looked like gloating but not so sure. He blandly spoke, "I heard that this Heartless Sword is an old friend of yours, Long Tianyun. Well, that you are good friends... I guess you must have complicated expressions in your heart at the moment having such a good friend, right? I don't think you will tell us the truth, right?"

Long Tianyun's face turned dark. He was silent.

"However, Situ Yu came here today not for the supreme dan beads. No matter how powerful he is, it is impossible to snatch the dan beads from us." Another man asked with confusion, "Why would he come here then?"

Long Tianyun took in a deep breath and spoke with sorrow, "Simple reason. He wants to set Cyan Cloud Sect up. He wants us to believe that Cyan Cloud Sect was messing with us... That they were trying to get our resources... That would arouse an issue between Cyan Cloud Sect and us. He wants us to fight and both get hurt! That is his plan!"

"Hmm? Why?" the other guy asked.

Although that Heartless Sword had told everybody Long Tianyun's secret plan and they were not so happy about it, but now that plan was never going to come true.

They knew Long Tianyun was smarter than the rest of them. Earlier, everyone would have stuck to the same plan too. They all knew the truth, so they just let it go.

Now they were in the same situation. They couldn't fight against each other at this moment. They were not fools, so they decided not to mention it. They even thought, [It was a good plan for Long Tianyun indeed. Now that the secret plan was shown to everybody, nobody will proceed it. As they all give it up, why don't I go for it? Wouldn't it be a safe thing to do then?]

There must be many of them who had such thought!

"His own interest. Green Mountain Sect is also the two great sects' target. They are trying to loosen their pressure. Cyan Cloud Sect always follow the Starlight Sect. They are simply Starlight Sect's good puppy... Cyan Cloud Sect won't be robbed. They will have to give in quite a part of their supreme dan beads, but they can still save some. It is much better than us..."

"If we start a fight against Cyan Cloud Sect, the two great sects can just come get on us with this reason. They won't even need to rob us, they can just do it as a moral punishment to us... That is the great sects' pleasure..."

"But when things go that way, it wouldn't be something that can be solved within one or two days. Even though the great sects are powerful, they can never just wipe us out easily..." Long Tianyun coldly smiled. "We have thousands of cultivators in the capital after all. Even if we have thousands of pigs here to be killed by the great sects, it would take time... This is what the Green Mountain Sect wants. They need time to escape!"

"They can even get away from the Chen-Xing City without losing a penny. They can just disappear in the wild, and after that, they will be back to their home. Even though there will be people of them who will be killed and hunted, even though they may lose some dan beads, most of the supreme dan beads will be back to their sect! As long as the dan beads safely get to their sect, they can make up any story as they want. When the great sect gets to them, they can say that the dan beads are robbed on the way back. They can even make it up for the great sects by giving them other things.

They may need to give up many treasures, but they can keep the dan beads. The rise of Green Mountain Sect in the future is going to be a great event. No kidding!"

Long Tianyun bitterly smiled. "Me and Situ Yu, we have known each other for a long time. But facing such a great benefit, it won't be so difficult to betray me, will it? It is not something rare in the world. If we don't know each other, how could he get to know what was in my mind and I get to know what was in his? We truly are close friends to each other... Haha, hahaha..."

He laughed. In his laugh, there was solitude and sorrow.

Nobody replied.

To be betrayed by an old good friend, Long Tianyun was the most lamentable man among them!

"No matter what, we have to change the plan now." Long Tianyun looked at the others. He could see that they were all on guard against him. He helplessly smiled and sighed. "It seems you all believe him? You think I am a foxy, despicable man?"

...

Chapter 364: Share the Hatred?

After what he said, a few of them started to cough. It looked like they had already agreed to do so.

Only the old man was calm and spoke in a deep voice, "I want to believe you, Clan Master Long. But tell me, do you think your words are still trustworthy? You insist that you would never do it like that man told us, but would you believe it if you were us?"

The old man's words seemed desultory, but everybody believed in him. Even Long Tianyun felt convinced. [That is true. I didn't think of that plan, but that doesn't mean I didn't want to do it if I can think of it. If I insist on denying it, it will be lying to myself too!"]

After a while, Long Tianyun spoke with depression, "Believe me or not, it doesn't really matter. The crisis in front is what we have to deal with now. If we cannot get through this, none of any schemes among us is possible. Don't you agree? Whether you believe me or not, I believe in the truth!"

"Clan Master Long is right. What do we do now?" They were smiling. They agreed with him in appearance, but more like slighting it over. Apparently, they were still vigilant to him.

Long Tianyun was downhearted, but he spirited up and said, "Maybe good luck always come along with misfortune. Situ Yu actually reminded us one thing..."

"He can set Cyan Cloud Sect up and get profits from it, why can't we seek for supports from outside?" Long Tianyun said, "If we go to Reaching Cloud Sect and talk to their head master Xiao Moyan, maybe we can make allies? We are in the same situation after all. It would be also a supporting force to them."

Their eyes were lit up.

"However, Reaching Cloud Sect may not be a good ally. When we successfully get through this, we must be in a bad condition. If Reaching Cloud Sect comes up with some evil idea against us, we will be unable to defend." That old man had a different idea.

People all agreed with him. His concern was very possible to happen, so they couldn't ignore it.

"Hmm. That is true... Hmm. We absolutely cannot trust Cyan Cloud Sect. It would be suicide to depend on them. Green Mountain Sect has shown their evil intention. Reaching Cloud Sect is actually the most powerful one among the three. We surely cannot ignore it... Apparently, they are all no good allies... Well then, since they are all bad choices... We have only one option now."

Long Tianyun's eyes lit up. "The last option!"

They asked him, "Ah? What option? Which option?"

Long Tianyun spoke word by word, "The last choice is... Ling-Bao

Hall! Feng Zhiling!"

The guys were shocked and then they were enlightened. They spoke at the same time, "That's right! Great idea!"

Among all forces, Ling-Bao Hall was the one in biggest danger!

They were the most watched with greed!

They were also the common target to everyone in the world!

Now, although they were an enemy to the whole world, they were the best option for the eight noble clans to be an ally!

Only Ling-Bao Hall was not greedy about their supreme dan beads at all!

The dan beads were all sold by Ling-Bao Hall.

Those supreme dan beads were most likely Feng Zhiling's work!

The only one who would never be interested in robbing supreme dan beads would be Ling-Bao Hall!

It would be hilarious that they wanted to snatch them back, because they simply didn't need to...

There was another thing that was good for the eight noble clans about Ling-Bao Hall...

Ling-Bao Hall needed allies much more than the noble clans!

If the noble clans joined Ling-Bao Hall, they would be treated as distinguished guests!

There was more advantage for the noble clans to be allies to Ling-Bao Hall. Ling-Bao Hall wasn't as powerful as the two great sects. They were surely rich, but not powerful. When things went by, the noble clans wouldn't have to worry about Ling-Bao Hall getting back on them. They wouldn't even care if they did.

No matter the noble clans used Ling-Bao Hall to get through the crisis, or Ling-Bao Hall used the noble clans, or maybe they were using each other, they were allies. Before the crisis was gone, as Ling-Bao Hall's allies, it would be easy to ask Ling-Bao Hall for more supreme dan beads. It would be a way to defeat their common enemy. Ling-Bao Hall surely would consider about it, and most likely agree to it. That was a huge benefit for the noble clans!

With all these advantages, it would be fool not to become allies with Ling-Bao Hall—the best ally!

"Let's go to Ling-Bao Hall! We share the hatred to the great sects and we fight together!"

Suddenly, they were all shoulder to shoulder now!

...

The masked man in black, the one who was recognized as the Heartless Sword, Situ Yu, moved a long distance and made sure no one followed him. He turned aside and disappeared behind a wall.

He pulled down the mask and wiped the sweat on his forehead. In his eyes, there was calmness and sharpness.

Behind the mask, it was a fleshless face. It was not peach blossom at all. He was actually the No. 1 Assassin in the Land of Han-Yang, Ning Biluo!

"That is so damn exhausting to set somebody up. That is so not my way," Ning Biluo murmured, "however, mission completed..." He dragged off a blood bag and threw it to the wall.

The blood splashed out.

Looking at the blood, Ning Biluo was lost in thoughts. [What a good trick to play wounded... I should keep it as a trick in real fights. It will make my enemy underestimate me. That will be a great help to me... What a good trick... I wonder where does Lord Ye learned it from. Why does he have so many weird but good methods...]

[Whatever, it is not my business. I should check on Liu Changjun. What a job...]

Ning Biluo put on the mask again and then disappeared in the dark like the wind.

...

Liu Changjun was running wildly like crazy!

That's right. He was running for life!

...

Chapter 365: Terrible Hornet's Nest

Liu Changjun was being hunted like crazy.

As Ning Biluo said, it was such an exhausting job to set somebody up!

Liu Changjun was the only one of the three that truly messed with a hornet's nest!

It was like a huge terrible hornet's nest!

He got into the base camp of the assassins from the Kingdom of Lanfeng...

If Liu Changjun hadn't been instructed by Ye Xiao for several months and became quite much stronger than before, he might have long died during this mission!

However, he was only nearly killed though.

When they made the arrangement, Ye Xiao assigned himself to the most difficult job and it was the most dangerous one. Ning Biluo took the second most difficult and most dangerous one for sure as the No. 1 Assassin.

Liu Changjun naturally got the simplest job.

It was easy. He only needed to go to somewhere there were lots of cultivators and pretend to be an official from the court. He only needed to spread out the fake news that the royal court was hunting assassins down in the capital. They wanted to disrupt the assassins and disperse them.

That was all.

Liu Changjun knew where he should go. When he was here to kill Ye Xiao, he met the other assassins in this place. It was actually a normal place, but all the top assassins would gather there.

It was a place for all assassins to get news or give out news.

He should be doing it under cover.

To spread a rumor in this place should be quite easy for Liu Changjun.

He had been an assassin, and he was still an assassin. It was easy for him to go to a place full of assassins and tell everybody something that he couldn't be sure about!

Liu Changjun even thought it was too easy for him when they were assigning missions.

[You call that a mission?]

However, when he arrived, after he shouted, he thought that maybe he f*cked up!

No. He absolutely f*cked up!

- Shoot, shoot, shoot, shoot... -

- Shoot shoot shoot...-

- Shoot... -

Hundreds of assassins jumped up at the same time approaching him. Nearly half of them were emitting a blue glow with shining eyes!

A little bit further were more people jumping over. There were so many people and it looked like dark cloud covering the entire world! Swords, lights, killing intent!

Liu Changjun was stunned!

[What the hell!

What is wrong?

No way...

All the top assassins in the Land of Han-Yang are here?

Oh my god...]

He was like a wolf that wanted to show his strength in the flock of sheep, but when he really jumped in the the flock, he found that it wasn't a flock of sheep...

He thought that there should be hundreds of sheep there, but instead there were only thousands of lions!

That was how he felt when he got there.

What should that wolf felt? It was exactly how Liu Changjun felt!

It felt like a billion alpacas turning into elephants and running over his heart!

It scared Liu Changjun's soul out of his body!

He could only have time to say a few words.

It was actually just two words!

"Holy sh*t!"

And then he just turned around and kept running!

Thousands of assassins were there. How could they simply let him go?

"Get that official!"

"Kill him!"

"Tear him!"

The crowd burst into anger. Endless assassins chased after him! Endless assassins got over to stop him! Endless assassins showed up on the way Liu Changjun was fleeing!

Dozens of sword light showed up in the sky turning into dozens of long dragons!

They were emitting a shining glow, shooting over to him!

Liu Changjun nearly peed on his pants when he saw that, even though he had always been a brave man!

Not that he stopped being a brave man, it was just too overwhelming and shocking. [Really? I am just playing a small official. You are lifting a mountain to kill a fly, aren't you? A cannon for an ant? Thousand years old tree to hit a mosquito!

What the fxck... Shxt...!

Holy shake!

This must be powerful enough to even deal with the House of the Chaotic Storms...

I actually hit on the center of this mess?

I actually tried to arouse dissension in it?

I... I... I was just too bold...]

Liu Changjun kept running like hell with tears of regret in his eyes.

The assassins wouldn't let him go!

Many hidden flying weapons kept shooting at him on his important parts...

The only thing he could do was to run as fast as he could.

- Puff! -

"Ouch..." He suddenly screamed and then ran even faster. At the moment, there were two knives sticking on his butts!

Two knives on two sides. That was quite good looking!

What impressed the assassins was that he actually ran faster with the knives on his butt than earlier when nothing hit him!

What an unbelievable man.

Every assassin praised him in mind. They finally understood one thing. They realized that when they were retreating in the battle, if their horses were exhausted, they only needed to stab a knife on the horse's butt to make it run like lightning!

Looking at Liu Changjun who was running fast like hell with two knives on his butt ahead of them, they all seemed to realize something!

[I see! That is actually strategy!]

- Shoot, shoot, shoot, shoot... -

Endless flying weapons were like raining over him. They kept shooting towards Liu Changjun like crazy. Liu Changjun kept screaming because he was getting hit.

"Ouch!"

"Ah!"

"Damn it!"

"Ouuuuch..."

"My god that hurts..."

However, he never slowed down a bit. Under such fatal circumstances, even if his head was chopped off, he would run another three hundred miles before he fell down, let alone he was just hurt!

The assassins were chasing him without stop. They were determined. [God damn it. He was stabbed like a hedgehog, yet he actually runs fast like a rabbit!

I wonder how far can you run more!]

...

Chapter 366: One Sword Strike Shocked Thousands Of Men

Although he was hit by endless flying weapons, those were no deadly wounds. Liu Changjun was covered by blood and forcibly rushed out to the street. He had lost too much blood. The energy he gathered up to escape had almost vanished. He started to feel blurry in sight. He couldn't hold it anymore, but then he saw a masked man in black show up in front of him!

Liu Changjun didn't spend time in thinking. He just raised his hand and swayed the sword against that man. He had been so exhausted, but suddenly became vigorous again. He rushed over like a mad tiger, with fearlessness!

He thought that if he couldn't rush over, he would die there!

At the moment, the first thing he had to do was break through the surrounding and fled. That was the only way to keep himself safe.

"It's me!"

Ning Biluo shouted.

However, Liu Changjun could only think about rushing over it. He had basically lost his mind. He only followed his instinct to fight. So he struck.

Ning Biluo dodged.

Liu Changjun drove his life energy to sway the sword and his sword struck down beside Ning Biluo with a colorful glow.

Behind him, the hundreds of Sky Origin Stage cultivators whose swords were emitting blue light rushed over!

The man in front of Liu Changjun was surely a superior out of superior cultivators!

Ning Biluo's eyes emitted hot qi with killing intent!

Suddenly, his waist straight up.

His eyes were calm and he was looking down upon everything!

He just stood in the air, and he looked so slim like a sword!

It was like a sword connecting the sky and the earth!

The next moment, he waved his hand and then a sword showed up in his hand!

It was like a sword that was made of water.

The sword light kept shining on it.

He stopped doing anything. He just kept looking at those assassins who were rushing over to him. His eyes were filled with heat.

As the assassins came closer, Ning Biluo's eyes turned crazier.

The killing intent that formed into qi around him had begun to turn solid. The next moment, the qi erupted out!

Ning Biluo still didn't move!

The hundreds of assassins who had been rushing over like crazy suddenly felt extremely scared all of a sudden!

It was an instinct that they realized their lives were in danger!

They felt like an ancient godlike killer was standing in front of them!

Everybody had one same thought, [If I rush over, I will die!]

When they had such feelings, Ning Biluo's qi hadn't burst yet!

- Whoo! -

Every assassin made the same choice at the same time!

They stopped without hesitation. They forcibly stopped themselves in the air!

The one who was leading couldn't slow it down as quickly as he wanted, although he had tried his best.

When he finally stopped, he was about three meters away from Ning Biluo!

That was so close!

All of a sudden, that man felt himself covered with goosebumps. He felt cold on his back. He looked at the eyes that were filled with heat and killing intent. His palms were cold as well as his heart.

He was hopeless. He only had one thought, [I am dying!]

The man who had rushed too far away and became closest to Ning Biluo thought that he would die when he saw Ning Biluo, but unexpectedly, Ning Biluo didn't do it!

He just stared at the man with cold eyes, like he was staring at a dead body.

He did nothing!

The man screamed in a strange sound. He stepped back a few

steps and nearly fell to the ground.

He felt so grateful and happy that he didn't get killed. He nearly kneeled down and say thank you.

That was lucky.

The man in front of him didn't kill him!

The assassins kept coming over like tide. Everyone was a lawless figure, however, at this moment, they were stopped right there by one person!

Within just one second, they were stopped!

The man in front of them didn't even say a word and he didn't do anything. He just stood in the air silently. His calm eyes were emitting the heat from the killing intent!

At this moment, everyone couldn't help but have one thought, [This guy is a godlike killer!

If I go forward further, I will be killed. There will be no exception!

If he strikes over, no one of us can defend it!]

In fact, there were thousands of assassins. If they truly rushed over and attacked Ning Biluo, even though he was the No. 1 Assassin in the world, he would be smashed into minced meat at once!

However, the assassins actually didn't dare to move when they were facing Ning Biluo!

A man with a sword, astonished thousands of assassins!

Nobody dared to step ahead a bit!

How fierce!

Behind him, in the dark, Liu Changjun was impressed!

[This is Ning Biluo!

This is the legendary No. 1 Assassin in the Land of Han-Yang!

So fierce! So vigorous! He truly is the No. 1 Assassin!]

"May I ask who it is?" Finally, an assassin stepped ahead and asked. He cautiously looked at Ning Biluo and asked with a low voice.

Ning Biluo coldly stared at him in silence. The killing intent on

him was increasing!

The assassin was startled and he felt cold at once. He couldn't help sweating. His clothes became totally wet within seconds. That was actually the power of just a stare.

The next moment, Ning Biluo did something else. It was not killing. He just turned around slowly in the air and moved away slowly.

He didn't say anything.

The thousands assassins looked at him turning around and leaving—none of them moved either. They were shocked by his vigor and fierceness. Nobody dared to move.

- Thring! -

They heard the sound of a sword. It was Liu Changjun's sword being put back into the scabbard.

Ning Biluo just stepped forward in big strides walking down in the air like he was walking down on the stairs with nothing in his hand. From high to low, he walked slowly to the ground and grabbed Liu Changjun. Then, they walked side by side, not fast, not slow.

When they started to walk away, Ning Biluo said something without turning over his head.

It was the only thing he had said since he showed up.

"If you want to act wild in the Kingdom of Chen, you better know you are far below the league!"

...

Chapter 367: My Idol!

That was domineering!

The assassins all felt shocked in mind; all of them was astonished.

At this moment, Liu Changjun said something with a thrilled voice, "My Lord..."

His voice was hushed but full of passion.

After a while, they turned over a corner and disappeared.

Everybody was shocked by the words.

"My Lord!"

What did "My Lord" mean?

Generally, it was how a man in the court called his higher authorities.

[Hmm. The man we were trying to kill claimed to be an official of the Kingdom of Chen. The 'My Lord' he said had surely revealed the truth to us.

That godlike killer must be a man of the royal court of the Kingdom of Chen.

That is out of our expectation. There is actually such a super powerful cultivator in the royal court!]

Everybody was worried. [If... If we truly go fight against the royal house and encounter that man, how likely can I survive that?]

Thinking and thinking, they all felt wet and cold in hands!

Everybody knew that they only had mere chance to survive that!

It was just such a terrible person!

...

There was a man on the opposite side against the assassins who saw the whole thing. It was the chief plotter of the whole issue.

It was Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao tried so hard trying to make the Sunlight Sect start a fight against the Boundless Lake. He was exhausted. He thought that it should be easy for Liu Changjun to complete the task, so he didn't plan to come and help him. However, he still felt worried about it, which should have been out of no reason. After thinking for a while, he eventually came to this place to make sure

everything went well. When he had just arrived, he saw Ning Biluo playing a good show!

Ye Xiao was shocked. He looked at them and felt thrilled. He felt like at least ten thousand alpacas were running over his heart.

[What the hell...

Ning, you are awesome!

You just stand there and shocked all those assassins back!

That must be ‘a small knife stops all’!

That is overwhelming, invincible, unbreakable.

But... But... I told you to arouse dissension here... That is what you should do. Now you are being awesome. That is right. What then? Where is the dissension I want?

Where is it?]

Ye Xiao was upset. He was extremely speechless!

[You are not making any dissension. You are teaching them...

I give up to you!

I truly do!]

"That was awesome! That was domineering!" Liu Changjun said it again and again.

Ye Xiao just got into the door and heard him.

Liu Changjun was covered by miserable wounds, but that didn't stop him from being shocked and thrilled!

His voice was shaking and his eyes were full of passion.

That was a milestone fight in his life. From that, he finally got to know what a super cultivator should be like!

[A man should be vigorous and domineering like that, or he is just wasting his life!

A sword stands while all men bow to it!]

Liu Changjun felt thrilled and excited whenever he thought of that scene!

Before that, Ning Biluo was just someone Liu Changjun feared for, however, Ning Biluo now became his idol!

In Liu Changjun's heart, Ye Xiao was the No. 1, while Ning Biluo was No. 2!

Hmm. No. At this moment, Ning Biluo was No. 1, while Ye Xiao was only No. 2!

Ning Biluo looked calm and cold as he helped dealing with the wounds on Liu Changjun's body.

Liu Changjun was lucky but unlucky at the same time. It was a simple task, yet he didn't complete it and even got hunted by thousands of assassins. However, it wasn't quite a bad thing. Ning Biluo took off dozens of flying weapons from Liu Changjun's wounds. There were darts, flying needles, flying knives, iron caltrops... There were so many different weapons, but none of them caused any fatal wound. How lucky he was!

It wasn't so lucky though!

When Ye Xiao entered the room, he heard Liu Changjun's words. He sighed. "Oi, listen, I don't understand... You have totally failed the mission. We have a perfect strategy, but now you made things go to the opposite direction. What are you happy for? It is so hard to understand!"

The two assassins were both stunned.

Liu Changjun was idolizing Ning Biluo while Ni Biluo was enjoying it, even though he tried to pretend he wasn't. They were

both shocked.

Ye Xiao rubbed his forehead and said, "Come on, brothers. You can be better. Where is the dissension I told you to make? Where is it? Where is the mischief? Where is the discord?"

The two of them stopped enjoying. They finally remembered their missions, and they both felt shame so they lowered their heads.

Ye Xiao sighed and gave a thumbs up. "You failed, and one of you kept praising the other while the other is enjoying it. Isn't it too good for you..."

The two of them blushed.

Ye Xiao sighed.

He had thought about a few plans that should be proceeded after they completed the first tasks. It should be coming one by one. Now it was obviously not possible.

Ning Biluo, the No. 1 Assassin showed up in the capital. That ruined all the plans in Ye Xiao's brain!

The only thing Ye Xiao wasn't sure yet was whether those men recognized Ning Biluo or not.

If even one of those assassins recognized him, it would be bad enough for them...

[Brother Ning, Great Assassin Ning, are you here to help or to ruin me?]

"Forget it. Let's go to Ling-Bao Hall then!"

Ye Xiao made the decision right away.

Since he couldn't do anything further now, he decided to go back to Ling-Bao Hall and see what would happen.

Ye Xiao could only sigh as he thought, [I was planning to pull House of the Chaotic Storms into this mess. Opportunity comes from bigger disturbance!]

...

Chapter 368: Until Death!

For an entire night, the only completed task was the dissension between Sunlight Sect and Boundless Lake!

The No. 1 great sect in the Land of Han-Yang and the most powerful assassination association in the Land of Han-Yang!

They were in a historical fight!

Nearly half of the capital was full of fights!

At the end, it was never about hatred or mistakes or anything. It was simply killing and killing!

When there were four men who died in the Sunlight Sect, things had gone crazy.

Two of the top assassins of the Boundless Lake killed two superior cultivators in the Sunlight Sect with their lives!

One of the assassins was a vice master saint! He was exactly the one who went out to buy drinks.

He was a strong one, and he shouldn't have died so soon. However, he was the one who went to buy the Maiden Red. He loved drinking. It was so hard to have a chance to drink, so he had to drink as much as he could. They hadn't finished drinking, yet he

had already drunk up over a dozen jars of Maiden Red.

He drank like it was his last chance to drink in his life, so raring.

When they were drinking, the Boundless Saint even said something to him specially.

"I can't watch it anymore.

"Do you really have to? You act like you haven't drink anything for eight lives...

"It is not like you will never drink again. Do you have to drink like this?" Boundless Saint frowned when he said it.

"Who knows. Maybe I won't have any chance to drink anymore." The vice master saint kept drinking.

Nobody knew that he was actually telling the truth!

He was so drunk that he couldn't fully operate his martial arts. A tiny mistake could get him killed under such a dangerous situation. He was like a drunk cat getting involved in a dog's fight.

He was drunk and he lost it. He didn't even dare to die.

That was why he was the first one to die on the Boundless Lake's

side!

The Maiden Red he bought became the last drink of his life.

That was liquor for death, also liquor for goodbye!

Two men died. The rest assassins of the Boundless Lake all had bloodshot eyes!

The top assassins were no ordinary figures!

They were all brothers who had been together for dozens of years. Now two of them were lost!

Boundless Saint shouted with sorrow like he was crying!

The smell of alcohol suddenly went away from him.

He was full of regret and condemning himself.

[Why would I have to drink during this dangerous time? It is my stupidity that killed two of my oldest brothers.]

The vice master saint had reached the eighth level of the Sky Origin Stage. If he hadn't drunk that much, he would have never died, as he was a calm and cautious man!

However, after the drinks, he became bold and reckless...

So he lost his life.

To stay cautious when dealing with many people was the right choice. It was always wrong to keep attacking!

That was why he died so soon.

Knowing it was different from following it!

Boundless Saint was shouting like crazy. He was so heart-broken and he could only vent the emotion by killing!

He kept striking out different techniques. In the dense fog, there were needles flying in and out.

He was known as a man who never used other weapons but only needles, but now he was holding a sword.

It was a sword that was partly hidden and partly visible!

The sword emitted light and there would definitely be blood splashed out! The needles flew out and there would definitely the sound of people screaming!

Boundless Saint was fully operating all that he could!

Dozens of superior cultivators were fighting in a crazy way. Wherever they passed by were encountering the most misfortune. The Heaven Worship Square that was right in front of the royal house was completely ruined. The Crown Prince's Palace was half ruined when they fought that way. Luckily, they just stayed there for a while.

The Crown Prince's Palace was surely not the miserable one. Zuo Xiang Fu, the House of Zuo, was the one that suffered the most. As the Boundless Lake's residence, House of Zuo was destroyed more than a half.

Zuo Wuji gritted with his eyes, with a green face, looking at the cultivators who were fighting in the air.

[A bunch of bastards. Why do they suddenly have to fight on my roof?]

He never knew that he was actually the one who indirectly led to this fight. What an achievement!

Zuo Wuji gave Ye Xiao information about the Boundless Lake. Zuo Wuji gave him advices. He was the one who planned it all.

Ye Xiao was just carrying it out.

It was going right as Zuo Wuji planned, however, they both didn't see that... the plan would get Zuo Wuji's house destroyed...

If Zuo Wuji knew the truth, he would throw up. He would puke till he died!

He would definitely catch somebody to pay for the reconstruction of his house!

The fight finally ended with both sides badly damaged.

Boundless Saint fled away with his top assassins embarrassedly. Before he left, he said something, "From now on, the fight between Boundless Lake and Sunlight Sect will never stop until my death!"

If some ordinary people said so, it would be nothing but meaningless words. It would be lucky to survive the fight against the most powerful sect in the Land of Han-Yang. Revenge? Until death? That was simply a sweet dream!

However, it was Boundless Saint who said so. That was not meaningless at all. It meant there would be a most horrible and bloody revenge falling on Sunlight Sect in the future!

In fact, even if Boundless Lake didn't take revenge on this, Sunlight Sect had already lost much.

Boundless Lake had only lost two top assassins and one vice master saint. Five men were injured, but they all safely retreated. Sunlight Sect had lost much more!

Sixteen men joined the battle at the beginning, and then eight superior cultivators joined in later. Twenty-four cultivators of Sunlight Sect in total got in that fight. Ji Chengfeng was the one who had highest position in the sect. When the fight ended, he made a head count and nearly passed out.

There were only eleven men left!

The others were all slaughtered!

They all died in a miserable way! They didn't even have bodies left!

Sunlight Sect totally lost the battle.

Looking at those fragmentary bodies and many men in wounds, Ji Chengfeng gritted with his teeth and his face turned dark and green.

"Boundless Lake. I don't care if it is a mistake or not anymore. We are now enemies until death! This will never end till the Boundless Lake is wiped out!"

...

Chapter 369: Spear in Belly?

"And... And... Whoever aroused the dissension... Once I find him, I will kill his entire clan! I am going to make that bastard suffer ten thousand years until he begs for death!" Ji Chengfeng thought of such and got emotional. He realized that the inner wound that he suppressed down forcibly earlier has now bursted. He spat out blood mist and fell back on the ground!

He was both physically and mentally wounded.

Before he passed out, he could only say one thing, "Go ask our superior cultivators to come!"

At the same time, Boundless Saint was dealing with the wounds on his body. He gave the order fiercely, "All assassins in Boundless Lake come to Chen-Xing City right away! I am going to kill every single one of the people from Sunlight Sect who dares to come to this city! I will bury them all into the ground of this city! I will slaughter our enemy and show our dignity!"

"Revenge for my brothers!"

"Revenge!"

"Revenge!"

A noble man will take ten years to revenge, while a sneaky man would do everything he can for it!

A disaster of the martial world began as Boundless Saint said those words!

...

It was in the Ling-Bao Hall!

After all these days, Wan Zhenghao had lost weight. He suffered insomnia for night after night.

This night, he heard that there was no restraint outside anymore. People started to fight. He felt even more worried. He heard that those were all Sky Origin Stage cultivators, so he felt rather scared.

[Oh my god. Please don't make your way here.]

While he was worrying, the window was opened. - Shoot, shoot, shoot. - Three figures showed up in his room all of a sudden.

Three masked men in black with powerful killing intent stood there!

At this moment, Wan Zhenghao felt soft in his legs. He nearly lost his soul and peed and pooped in his pants.

[Here they come... They are here to kill me...]

He felt cold in heart.

He looked at the three men with desperation in eyes. His fat on the body was shaking; that was such a marvelous scene.

"Give us some hot tea and go ask for more hot water," one of them asked. He then saw Wan Zhenghao trembling, so he was curious, "Why are you trembling?"

Wan Zhenghao cried out and finally figured it out, "Oh my bloody god. You three are acting like ghosts. You scared the sh*t out of me... I thought you were assassins here to take my life... I haven't been wanted with such a high price in thousands of years..."

He finally recognized the voice. It was Feng Monarch.

He so wanted to cry.

[Oh my god!

Our mainstay eventually came back...]

Tears came out from Wan Zhenghao's eyes. The three men quivered at the same time as they turned over their head.

Even Ning Biluo, who was for the first time so close to Wan

Zhenghao, felt horrent.

A huge fat guy crying with tears splashed away was such an unbearable scene to them.

Ning Biluo threw up in mind. [That is too much a scene to me...]

Ye Xiao sighed. He sat on the chair and pulled off his mask. He felt it gross, and he couldn't bear it anymore.

At this moment, Ye Xiao finally made up his mind to help Wan Zhenghao lose weight!

He would do it for nothing but only his own health. He had to force Wan Zhenghao to lose weight as soon as possible.

Ye Xiao was sure that if he saw Wan Zhenghao like this a few more times, he would lose weight himself, because he would throw up all the time...

It was a pile of real fat and meat in front of him.

If somebody could still eat facing it, Ye Xiao would bow to him! That was no lying!

"Wan, you can be relieved now. We have an opportunity now, so don't be so desperate. After this, I am going to make more dan beads for you to lose fat. I am going to help you lose weight!" Ye

Xiao promised.

Wan Zhenghao was spirited up. He stopped shaking and he didn't look scared anymore. He asked with his eyes opened, "Really?"

Ye Xiao nodded to confirm.

Wan Zhenghao jumped up. - Wow! - He was so happy, "I trust you, Monarch! No problem! I will ease myself. I won't be desperate! Fxck it! I am going to survive this!"

With Feng Monarch's promise, he surely could get those dan beads soon. Wan Zhenghao felt encouraged like never before! He even felt like he could fight against the entire world to live on!

At this moment, his eyes were filled with glow.

He was so cheerful.

He was full of hopes!

He was full of passion!

Liu Changjun was stunned!

"Wan, I thought the thing you fear the most was death! Now I know that, deep in your heart, there is something much more

important than staying alive..." Liu Changjun said, "That was losing weight!"

Wan Zhenghao humphed. He looked up and spoke with pride, "You don't know me. You are just ignorant. I always face death unflinchingly. I am generous, brave, righteous. Do you know it now?"

Liu Changjun was shocked. When he came back to himself, he puked.

Wan Zhenghao laughed. Waves showed up on his body again. He sighed and said, "You don't know my pain... You know, when a man's belly drops down to the feet, when a man cannot show his spear under the belly and doesn't have male capabilities, his spear can only touch his own belly no matter how he tries... It lasts for thousands of years... Do you know what kind of pain it is?"

Wan Zhenghao shouted to the sky, "I am finally going to lose weight!"

His eyes were filled with tears.

"his spear can only touch his own belly no matter how he tries... It lasts for thousands of years..." That made the three of them feel shocked, and then they only felt terrified.

It truly was a terrifying thing if it lasted for thousands of years!

It would terrify every man in the world!

However, they saw Wan Zhenghao's belly hung down nearly to the floor and they knew they shouldn't laugh at him. They should show sympathy to him, but no matter how stable and calm they were, they laughed out so loud that it even shocked the heavens!

Ye Xiao laughed so hard that his belly hurt. Ning Biluo had been carrying so much burden in his life and he hadn't been laughing with joy for many years. However, when he realized what Wan Zhenghao was talking about, he nearly died laughing.

...

Chapter 370: Lord Ning!

Liu Changjun was covered by wounds. When he laughed, he felt pain. However, he was still laughing while he was moaning. "God damn it. Wan... You are genius! Hahahahaha... Ouch... It hurts... Hahaha..."

Wan Zhenghao looked around. He was stunned and then understood what they were laughing for. He was a bit embarrassed, but he had gotten used to it long ago. He had been living like this for thousands of years after all. It was painful but normal to him. He laughed too. While he was laughing, he pointed at Ning Biluo with his fat finger, "Who's this..."

Ning Biluo laughed wildly too. He didn't seem like an assassin at all right now.

Wan Zhenghao thought that he must be a man Monarch Feng and Liu Changjun just recruited. That was normal. So he talked like he was the boss.

He acted like Ning Biluo was a new guy coming to see him.

[Hmm. I am Boss Wan.]

"This is Lord Ning!" Liu Changjun introduced seriously.

Wan Zhenghao nodded. [Hmm? Lord Ning?]

Then he must be from the royal court.

He must be an official of the Kingdom of Chen.]

Powerful and wealthy like Wan, he wouldn't have respect for people from the royal court, especially the royal court of the Kingdom of Chen. He just nodded and said casually, "May I ask, which department are you working in? What position? Maybe I am a good friend to your boss."

Liu Changjun was shocked. He knew what was going on quickly. He realized it was a mistake that was caused by the title. He tried not to laugh and spoke word by word, "Lord Ning is in charge of life and death."

Liu Changjun was lying though. It was just an aspect to understand it!

However, he successfully misled Wan Zhenghao.

Wan Zhenghao nodded with indifference. He just made an 'oh' as he arrogantly said, "You work in the Ministry of Penalty. Such an important job."

"Lord Ning is not people from the Ministry of Penalty." Ye Xiao couldn't hold it. He laughed and said, "Lord Ning is working with Yama, the lord of death. It is not our law that he dispenses."

Wan Zhenghao was confused. "Yama? What? Is there a

department working with Yama in the government? I have never heard of it..."

Liu Changjun laughed and said, "How can you not hear of Lord Ning. He is a well-known figure. As long as you hear his name, you know what he does."

Wan Zhenghao made an 'oh' and indifferently said, "It turns out Lord Ning is a famous person..."

He was thinking that no one important in the court was named Ning.

[I know clearly about it all...

Hmmm. No way. Liu Changjun is an assassin after all. He shouldn't know many officials in his life. Maybe he just doesn't know what is important in the court. Oh please don't make such joke...]

Wan Zhenghao looked down at Ning Biluo upon him and said, "What is your name?"

Ning Biluo gradually stopped smiling. He looked at Wan Zhenghao casually and blandly spoke, "I am Ning Biluo."

"Hmm. Good name. Ning Biluo. Biluo. Hmm. Poetic one. '[Up in heaven and down to hell he went](#).' What a beautiful poem... Brother Ning, you truly have a good name... Ah! Ah! No, no, no,

no, no..."

When he said that poem, he finally figured out something, but he couldn't stop talking until he finally realized it.

He moaned.

He was covered by goosebumps.

He stood up quickly and spoke in fear, "What did you say? You are... Ning... Ning Biluo?"

Ning Biluo casually nodded. That was right. He was who Wan Zhenghao thought he was.

Wan Zhenghao trembled and spoke with a shaking voice, "King of Assassins, Ning Biluo?"

Ning Biluo blandly spoke, "So Boss Wan has heard of me. Such an honor..."

"Uh... Ha... Haha... Hahahaha..." Wan Zhenghao acted like there was a windmill in his throat. He stared at Ning Biluo like he had seen a ghost. He was trembling and then suddenly sat on the chair. His eyes were blank and sweat came out on his forehead.

[Oh my god...

Ning Biluo!

King of Assassins...

I... I... I was acting so arrogantly in front of him...

I was too much vigorous, too much righteous, too much fair and square...

Oh my bloody god!]

He only felt dizzy. He could pass out at any second.

What Wan Zhenghao feared the most in the world wasn't Ye Xiao or Gu Jinlong.

He had been a rich man all the time. The richer he was, the more he feared of death!

Wan Zhenghao was so afraid of death!

He was afraid of Ning Biluo, not because Ning Biluo was strong and powerful...

Wan Zhenghao was afraid of those who killed for money, the professional assassins. He never feared those powerful men. But, as for Ning Biluo, he was the best assassin of all!

That was why Wan Zhenghao was afraid of Ning Biluo the most. Ning Biluo was the No. 1 Assassin in the world, the King of Assassins!

In the thousands years of Wan's life, the person he was afraid the most changed every hundreds of years. Assassins took turns to be king. The new always followed the old. King of Assassins would die anyway... In the recent twenty years, Wan Zhenghao was afraid of two people.

One was Boundless Saint!

The other was the King of Assassins, Ning Biluo!

However, he was afraid of Ning Biluo more than Boundless Saint.

The reason was simple. Ning Biluo was known as the No. 1 Assassin in the world!

Nobody, not even Boundless Saint could deny it!

It was a sure conclusion!

Wan Zhenghao met the one he was afraid the most in the world for the first time, the most powerful assassin, King of Assassins. He was shaking. He turned around and looked at Liu Changjun with hatred in eyes. "You... You... Bastard! You... You are going to get

me killed... Lord Ning... Is Lord Ning... Oh my bloody god..."

...

A line of a poem, The Song of Everlasting Regret (Bai Ju-Yi, 772-846 AD, China) . Biluo(碧落) is [from this poem](#).

Chapter 371: Be Rich

Earlier before, Boss Wan was acting arrogant like he was such an unimportant figure. All of a sudden, he was cautious and humble. He nearly kneeled down.

He even nearly fainted away.

Ning Biluo wouldn't bother to keep that in mind. He wouldn't do anything to Wan. In fact, he was more or less an employee to Wan. Even though Ning Biluo was working for Ye Xiao, Ye Xiao was Feng Zhiling, the Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall. It was reasonable to say that Ning Biluo worked for Ling-Bao Hall. Wan Zhenghao was the boss of Ling-Bao Hall, so it appeared Ning Biluo was working for Wan Zhenghao!

However, Wan Zhenghao could never let it go, as he was so afraid of King of Assassins.

Whenever Ning Biluo looked to Wan Zhenghao, in purpose or not, Wan Zhenghao would tremble. It nearly became a conditioned reflex to him.

[Oh my god. I am sitting in the same room with the No. 1 Assassin in the world...]

Thinking about that, Wan Zhenghao felt that he was like a mouse, staying with a cat in a room, trembling. The cat looked quite friendly and nice though...

What if he went mad?

Mouse was mouse while cat was cat.

Ye Xiao saw it and he sighed. [Wan has been through so much during his thousands of years of life. How experienced. He must have seen everything. He should have met so many people. Time passes and generation replaces generations. He has been living for such a long time. He should be a man who has seen through everything. How come... How come he is so afraid of death!

Maybe the saying is right... The wealthier you are, the more cowardly you will be! He is the richest man in the Land of Han-Yang, so he is also the one who is afraid of death the most!]

That was true.

"Mo... Monarch," Wan Zhenghao stammered, "the items that are paid to us as the price in the auction have all been delivered... That is such a huge amount. The storage room cannot hold all. Many of the items are placed in the yard. Could you..."

Obviously, he was asking Ye Xiao to take those things away, as they were all Ye Xiao's idea. It wasn't a good idea to keep them in the yard. There might be damage to them. They were all after all precious things. He didn't want to waste them!

Most importantly for Wan Zhenghao. [Let me show you where

they are now... Let's just get away from here... There is a... Uh, the King of Assassins... I am freaking out!]

Ye Xiao frowned and said, "That's alright. Just lead me to it."

As Ye Xiao said so, Liu Changjun was riled up. He was lying on the chair because he was seriously wounded.

There were really too many treasures. Over half of them were placed outside. The guards of Ling-Bao Hall couldn't protect them. Liu Changjun's men in his assassin group had to be guards of Ling-Bao Hall for some days.

Assassins to be guards, that was hilarious. Only Ling-Bao Hall would do such luxury thing!

It was not that they were wasteful, but things just went that way!

Liu Changjun had complained many times about it. "Have you ever seen any assassins being guards for anybody? That is the most stupid and hilarious thing!"

Now that Ye Xiao came back, he could finally let his men do what they should do.

He could finally assign them to some serious tasks.

Ning Biluo disappeared when Ye Xiao turned around.

As an assassin, he would never show himself in a conspicuous place.

He had been following Ye Xiao for such a long time. It was the limitation of how long he could stay uncovered. He had been breaking his own rules. Now that things were settled, he just went back to the shadow.

He would continue his elusive life.

Liu Changjun and Ye Xiao knew that Ning Biluo would never truly leave. He must be around somewhere.

If anything dangerous happened to Ye Xiao, Ning Biluo would show up immediately.

If there was nothing dangerous, he would never show up again...

Assassins might not be guards, but assassins must be the best guards, because they knew well about all the methods to kill!

That was Ye Xiao's thought when Ning Biluo disappeared.

...

When Ye Xiao saw the small mountain, which was actually formed by all those treasures, his mouth arched and formed a

smile.

And then he laughed.

[That's a lot!

There are actually this many? Hahahaha. I am going to be super rich this time. Those guys, they did have lots of good things!

Even when I was the Monarch in the Qing-Yun Realm, when I was in my most wonderful time, all I had was even less than one percent of these amount! That is so much!]

Ye Xiao had been shocked by the treasures already. However, this time, it was several times more than the last time. He was stunned!

He didn't dare to just throw all the stuffs into the Boundless Space anymore. There was something that could take his life in the Spaces.

That was the Cosmic Hades!

If the Cosmic Hades made another wave of cold qi eruption, he would be in a huge trouble! What he had now was times more than before. If cold qi eruption happened again, he would be unable to do anything to stop it. Maybe the Boundless Space would explode. He wouldn't make the same mistake again after what it had costed him. He wasn't a fool!

He picked a few pieces of stones and put them into the Sky Space. He then put half of those medical materials into the Wood Space. He would never leave these outside.

They were all plants. If he didn't keep them carefully, their efficacy would be greatly reduced. Besides, Wood Space had been attacked by the cold qi eruption several times. Even though the nine Spaces were connected, Wood Space was after all the weakest. With all those materials, he could definitely improve the Wood Space.

What surprised Ye Xiao was that among all those treasures, there was actually a bottle of Murk Water.

[Murk Water is the best of the best. It hasn't been seen for a thousand years even in the Qing-Yun Realm. I truly have never expected to see such a small bottle in this place!]

...

Chapter 372: Others

Ye Xiao naturally put them away in the Water Space to cherish them.

Compared to Sky Space, Wood Space and Water Space, the other spaces had limited gain. What they needed were special and rare stuffs, so it was reasonable that they couldn't get that much.

For the Fire Space, Ye Xiao only found some Fire Crystal Stones. They were given by Long Clan, which costed a lot of money. When they were put into the Fire Space, after just seconds, they became ashes. Clearly, they didn't seem to be anything with high value for the Fire Space.

Ye Xiao could clearly feel that the temperature increased a lot in the Fire Space.

In the center of Fire Space, there was a drop of liquid that was shining!

Ye Xiao shook his head and praised, [Fire Crystal Stones are the extremely valuable treasure for fire attributed martial arts. There is qi of fire inside them, and they are hard and firm. However, after hundreds of kilograms of Fire Crystal Stones were put into the Fire Space, it actually all came out with only one drop of liquid!

Everything else was gone!

How can I not be moved by such a scene! It truly is a difficult job to fill this space!]

Ye Xiao had thrown some Spiritual Stones into Spirit Space.

He did it quickly, not much longer than an instant.

However, the Cosmic Hades still shook, as it was too sensitive, especially for the things that it was interested in.

Ye Xiao didn't dare to put more things into it.

He put lots of strange metals into the Gold Space.

The rest of those treasures, including a huge amount of Spiritual Stones, were gathered into the Space Ring that Ye Xiao snatched from Gu Jinlong.

If he kept putting them into the space, he might have to do it in a rather slow and cautious way. This would give the Spaces some time to digest them. Even though the Cosmic Hades would sense it, it wouldn't have a chance to burst.

However, Ye Xiao didn't like it this way. The cold qi eruption was blustering indeed, but it was good for him. It helped him quite a lot to digest it! How could he not let it happen?

That was why he kept some of those stuffs, which would easily

arouse the eruption of the Cosmic Hades. Ye Xiao was now quite experienced about that.

As far as he was concerned, those stuffs he saved could lead to seven or eight eruptions of the Cosmic Hades... He was rather confident about it.

[I am in the third level of the Sky Origin Stage. After seven or eight eruptions... That will take me straight to the Spirit Origin Stage!

That is the day I will return to the Qing-Yun Realm!]

He was thinking as he was tidying everything up. He waved his hand again and again. As he waved, things disappeared one after another.

In Wan Zhenghao's eyes, Feng Monarch was taking everything into his space ring.

[That is normal. If I have a space ring, I can do that too. Maybe a little bit different to him. Feng Monarch really has a super spacious room in the ring!

I never heard there could be such a huge space inside the space ring... However, he is the Monarch. He surely has plenty of good stuffs!]

Only within two hours, all those items were gone clearly.

When Ye Xiao finished it, Liu Changjun had fallen asleep. For him, sleeping was the best way to recover.

The sky started to turn bright...

The fight between Boundless Lake and Sunlight Sect finally stopped after an entire night of fighting. They both went back to deal with their damages and made plans to win the war.

The men from those five clans were all with red eyes looking at the light from the east. They were waiting.

"We go to Ling-Bao Hall at daybreak."

The night had finally passed, and the light came from the sky!

...

At least thirty percent of the people in Chen-Xing City didn't sleep for the whole night!

These included people in the royal house, and people living within fifty miles around the royal house...

There were the officials of the royal court, people from all those sects in martial world, assassins...

There was a special person too.

It was someone in the House of the Chaotic Storms.

It was Master Bai.

He didn't sleep either.

He sat on the wheelchair with crystal eyes. Even if he hadn't slept for days even years, his eyes would still be clear, calm and steady, like he would never be troubled.

He was listening to the reports from different places in the Chen-Xing City.

He was listening carefully. There was a smile on his face all along. In his heart, he kept analyzing the information he got.

It was clear and logical.

No matter how messy things were, he could sort it into clear lines.

He would make no mistakes on this.

"They have begun struggle. They are trying whatever they can to

fight back. Such interesting ways to fight back," Master Bai spoke with a smile and looked at Wan-Er who was beside him.

Wan-Er nodded and smiled.

"It is quite an interesting opponent this time." Master Bai thought and then spoke in a low voice, "It should be Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall... No one else has such vigor and schemes like this."

Wan-Er nodded and said, "I guess so."

Master Bai shook the head and said, "Maybe it is not just him."

He raised his head and half closed his eyes. Two streams of lights emitted from his eyes to the first stream of light from the sky in the morning.

He spoke lightly, "Within just one night, troubles turned up in different places. Maybe it wasn't him alone doing that... There is someone helping him! That man who is helping him must be the one with schemes."

He faced the golden sunlight from the sky and said, "He must have supports. He found it recently. If he has the ability to break the balance in the capital, he would... He wouldn't need to ask for help from me that day."

"Moreover, Feng Zhiling might be clever, but it is limited... If he

is able to plan all this, he would have known what would happen after the cooperation with me. He would know that I would only solve his problem temporarily. What would come after it was much dangerous. He would know that working with me that day was a wrong choice!"

...

Chapter 373: Danger

"So, if he planned all this tonight, he would not ask for help from me. He would rather be squeezed up by the two great sects."

"It would only be an awkward situation for a certain period of time, but my help would lead to a forever impact to all."

"There must be someone else doing the scheme for him."

Master Bai casually spoke, "Now, I am quite interested with the guy who gave him these advices."

He looked at Wan-Er and blandly spoke, "Find this guy!"

Wan-Er stretched her mouth and said, "As you wish!"

Master Bai nodded and stopped the topic. He felt like the guy would never be able to escape because Wan-Er had promised she would find him.

He lightly spoke, "The seven days, it has been two and a half gone. They only started to move tonight. I set up the situation, and they broke it before they set up a new situation for me to break..."

"What a wonderful game. Let me just have fun playing with them."

He smiled. "It needs a good opponent to play games. The stronger he is, the better it feels to win."

"Stirring up the chaos, snatching the world. It is the most interesting game."

"I like it. I hope they can let me enjoy the game this time."

Master Bai showed a calm yet a bit shy smile. He said, "Feng Zhiling and the guy who gave him advices really worked well together. They actually broke the dead situation and converted it into their opportunity. Impressive. Maybe the game will make me feel... more satisfied this time."

"I hope that Feng Monarch can please you. The opponents you faced before were just so boring that I don't even want to think about them." Wan-Er smiled.

Master Bai nodded and he said, "Why isn't Xiu-Er still back yet? She should be back when things got messy last night."

Wan-Er smiled and said, "Xiu-Er should be back in three days. I think I have told you the day before yesterday. Maybe you are so into the game and didn't remember it."

Master Bai shook his head and said, "You misunderstand me. Xiu-Er has a different personality with you. You are soft and gentle, but you will decisively kill with cold blood to complete the mission. You will strictly follow the plan and finish your work in exactly the

day you should. Xiu-Er will save some time for things."

"That is why she will definitely save some time. She will do it before the day she planned. She always came back before the day she decided. The mission she was assigned to this time shouldn't take her that long. Even if she needed to travel from one side to the other in the Land of Han-Yang, it shouldn't keep her this long. There must be something special happening."

He frowned and said, "If Xiu-Er cannot make it back before noon, you go find her yourself. I feel that there must be something really bad that happened to her. It should be something really nasty..."

Wan-Er was worried. She said, "But in the Land of Han-Yang, who on earth has the capability to mess with the Xiu of Heavens? Even if somebody has the capability, does he or she dare to do so?"

Master Bai didn't answer.

He lowered his head. A few hairs hanging down from his forehead flew in the morning wind.

The next moment, he suddenly looked up. In his eyes, there were concerns.

"Don't wait till noon then. Do it now. Take the Fortune Map of Mountain and Rivers!"

Master Bai actually changed his mind.

Wan-Er was shocked. [Master actually said that? He is giving me the Fortune Map Of Mountain And Rivers?

Is Xiu-Er in some great trouble?]

"I will go now."

"Hmm."

Master Bai lowered his head.

Wan-Er didn't hesitate. She had rushed up to the sky in the blink of an eye. The next moment, she was moving in a lightning speed. Even lightning couldn't catch up with her now!

After seconds, she had disappeared.

Xiu-Er shouldn't be in any danger. Even if she really encountered some super powerful figure, she could still flee away. No matter who she might encounter, she could get away, because her capability was far beyond the limitation of this realm. Nobody in this realm could truly threaten Xiu-Er.

However, Master Bai, Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were all in restraint. They should not remove the restraint easily. Once they remove it and used their true power in this realm, they would have to face the nine extreme punishments!

That was something they had to deal with by themselves.

Wan-Er was quite nervous at the moment.

She hoped that Xiu-Er was alright.

In fact, she knew nobody could threaten Xiu-Er, but she was worried about Xiu-Er removing the restraint. If Xiu-Er removed the restraint, she would be able to kill anybody by just flicking her finger. However, after that, she would have to suffer the nine extreme punishments. That was a death challenge!

It was simply suicide to remove the restraint!

Master Bai never made wrong conjectures.

Xiu-Er had finished her works and started to go back a few days before the deadline!

She should be back to her master soon.

Thinking about her master, Xiu-Er felt happy full heartedly.
[When Master sees me, will he be happy and surprised?]

However, the moment she saw the outline of Chen-Xing City, she felt a stream of cold qi.

It came from that ice mountain. Xiu-Er wouldn't care about it if it was just some cold qi.

What bothered her the most was that inside the cold qi from the ice mountain, there was a strong vigor in it. It seemed staring at her, stopping her and trying to lock on her!

Xiu-Er looked down only to find that among the white snow and ice, a figure in white clothes and black hair was standing right there in the wind. She could feel the softness and cleanness from that person.

It was like a faery from the moon.

It stood on the ice mountain.

It stared at her.

She couldn't pass it.

Being locked on by such a figure, she knew she could never escape.

Xiu-Er thought for a while and didn't hesitate. She got down from the sky immediately.

...

Chapter 374: I Know Who You Are

She sighed when she was on the way down.

If she wasn't restrained, she could have just smashed that woman within seconds by waving her hand. They were not in the same league after all!

However, she was under the restraint of the heavenly punishment!

It was difficult to get rid of that woman, not to mention killing her.

That woman was a super powerful cultivator in the Land of Han-Yang!

"Who are you?" Xiu-Er looked at the masked woman in white. A narrow red line shined on Xiu-Er's white clothes.

The woman in white looked at her softly. The mask only covered her face, but her temperament was vivid. She spoke lightly, "Chaotic Storms. Xiu of Heavens? Lady Xiu-Er truly has a unique vigor."

Xiu-Er smiled blandly. "Are you here to stop me?"

The woman didn't answer her. She was covered on the face, and

Xiu-Er knew that she would never reveal herself, so she stopped asking 'who you are'.

[I will get to know who you are after.]

The woman in white spoke softly, "Chen-Xing City has become a messy situation. Things are out of order now. Cultivators all crowd together. Lady Xiu-Er, you should better stay away from that. It truly doesn't fit your dignity."

She spoke with sincerity, "Besides, there are a bunch of filthy men there. It wouldn't be appropriate for you, such a lady, to go into them."

Xiu-Er's face turned cold as she indifferently spoke, "Are you questioning my integrity?"

Chaotic Storms; Xiu of Heavens.

There was a time when Xiu-Er was in charge of the business of the House of the Chaotic Storms. She had nearly turned the whole world upside down. She had always been an important figure during those collapses in the history.

Hearing the woman in white, Xiu-Er naturally thought too much. She insisted that the woman was mocking her.

The woman in white realized Xiu-Er was angry, but she was still casual. "Lady Xiu-Er, please don't mistake me. I mean rather than

going into the fight in the city, why don't we, sisters, sit here drinking teas."

Xiu-Er humphed and then jumped up high. She became a stream of red light boosting in the sky.

She was heading to the capital.

[Talking never solves anything. It is much better take actions.

Don't you want to stop me?

Try it!]

The woman in white saw Xiu-Er move. She just followed her and disappeared.

The next moment, Xiu-Er felt that someone was staying in front of her blocking her way. If she kept rushing forward, she would definitely crash the woman.

Xiu-Er humphed and then changed her route. She started to go up. She looked like she had been planning to do so all along. She didn't show any embarrassment at all.

The figure in white was following her. It kept staying in front of her.

Xiu-Er was blocked several times by the figure. She couldn't stand it anymore, so she made a palm strike fiercely!

The figure in white sighed and said, "Do you have to?"

And then she made a palm strike back too.

The palm attacks were in equal power. - Boom! - It made a huge sound!

That showed Xiu-Er who was the better one. Xiu-Er was rolling in the air several rounds and then flew back out like a kite without strings. When she stood on the ground, she was surprised. She was actually back to where she first stood and talked.

It was exactly the point she had stood earlier.

The woman in white was standing right at where she had been, looking at her softly and blandly.

It felt like nothing had happened just before. She felt like everything was just happening in her own imagination, that she hadn't gotten away.

Xiu-Er stood on the ground as her face turned dark.

The woman in white was much stronger than she thought!

The woman in white was actually beyond the limitation of the Land of Han-Yang very much!

If Xiu-Er didn't remove the restraint, she would never be able to get through her and return to Chen-Xing City!

It was simply because there was so much difference between their levels of cultivation!

To make it simple, Xiu-Er, compared to that woman in white, was like an ant being compared to an elephant at the moment. No matter how special, how strong the ant was, it could do nothing to stop an elephant.

If Xiu-Er removed the restraint, even if just a tiny part of the restraint, things would turn around. The ant would become a dinosaur. An elephant was absolutely much weaker than a dinosaur. It was simply the same reason!

However, Xiu-Er was in restraint all the time. She would never be able to handle the situation if she didn't remove it!

In fact, the woman in white was too powerful to be in this realm. She didn't belong to this world. However, she showed up here. That meant she was determined to stop Xiu-Er.

All in all, Xiu-Er would have to remove the restraint if she wanted to get through this!

In fact, she didn't have to free all her capabilities. She only needed to remove ten to twenty percent of the restraint and she could be able to take the woman in white down easily. Even the entire Land of Han-Yang would break down under her strikes!

Even the Qing-Yun Realm couldn't endure the strikes from her, if she removed fifty percent of the restraint!

However, if she did so, there would be a serious cost... When she had the next rebirth, she would have to face the nine extreme heavenly punishment!

It was not just the nine punishments. She would have to bear the punishment she deserved and the nine extreme punishments at the same time. The first extreme punishment would be twice as much as the punishment she deserved. The second punishment would be twice as much as the first. The third would be four times as much as the second. The fourth would be eight times as much as the third...

It went all the way to the ninth!

That was so horrible that even Master Bai's father... the legendary Mighty Man couldn't endure!

Xiu-Er would definitely die in that!

To remove the restraint was suicide!

"So you are not going to let me go?" Xiu-Er took a deep breath in and blandly said, "Do you even know who I am?"

The woman in white showed sorrow in her calm and peaceful eyes. She nodded slowly and said, "I know who you are."

Xiu of Heavens smiled and said, "I don't know who you are, but if you keep pushing me, I will be able to know it as soon as I wish."

...

Chapter 375: The Beloved One?

"I know you must be from the Qing-Yun Realm. Aren't you!" Xiu of Heavens blandly spoke, "Have you ever heard the bloodshed seven thousand years ago in the Qing-Yun Realm?"

Xiu-Er sounded indifferent, but her eyes were sharp. She looked at the woman in white. "So, please do not push me too hard! Otherwise, when I get to know who you are... Your sect, your family, your friends, your brother and sisters..."

She stepped forward slowly.

While walking, she spoke word by word, "They won't die. I can assure you, those people will live a long time. They will live for ten thousand years! They can not live even one day less."

She approached the woman in white as she blandly said, "Because that is my fate. Do you understand what I mean?"

The woman in white shook.

She knew. She understood what Xiu-Er meant.

She truly did. She totally did.

Seven thousand years ago, there was a girl who made a bloodshed in the Qing-Yun Realm.

The word bloodshed here was not just exaggerated. It truly was bloodshed in the Qing-Yun Realm!

The girl had wiped out the most powerful sect in the Qing-Yun Realm, Authority Sect, on her own. No one in that sect had survived.

Including the head of the Authority Sect and all the branch sects under Authority Sect, they had all been killed. No less than seven million lives were taken in that event!

Seven million superior cultivators!

Their blood had made rivers crossing the entire Qing-Yun Realm!

The girl was exactly Xiu of Heavens. The person whom the woman in white wanted to stop right now.

If that bloodshed never happened, there wouldn't be the sects in the Qing-Yun Realm now. Those sects took the place of the Authority Sect, and the woman in white was from one of those sects.

The reason for that bloodshed was simple. It was extremely simple. The son of the headmaster of the Authority Sect wanted to have a girl. That was it.

The girl was... exactly Xiu of Heavens.

The Authority Sect protected their heir. They covered up for him. Again and again, they stood on his side. Finally, the young lad bribed a friend of Xiu-Er. They drugged her.

It was some aphrodisiac!

However, powerful as Xiu of Heavens, she didn't get affected by the low-class drugs.

When she realized it, she killed the young lad and all his people.

The Authority Sect was furious because of shame, and they started to seek revenge on her. However, they totally pissed Xiu-Er up. Xiu-Er burst in anger and slaughtered seven million men!

"I will wipe them up, those who bully girls!"

That was what she said back then.

Because of this bloodshed, there was a strict rule in the Qing-Yun Realm. 'Nobody is allowed to occupy a woman in forcible way! You can kill her, but you can absolutely not take her body in nasty ways!'

That was a first strict rule in the Qing-Yun Realm for the seven thousand years!

Nobody dared to disobey.

However, when the forest became bigger, there will be all kinds of birds. The Qing-Yun Realm was a huge world. No matter how it was strictly forbidden, someone would rape. Even the strict rule couldn't stop them. However, no matter who did so, the sects around the crime scene would do investigations in full effort. No matter who the rapists were, they would kill them. There was no exceptions. Nobody wanted that bloodshed to happen again!

It was after all such a world shocking event! It terrified everybody!

Now, the girl who made that bloodshed was standing right in front of the woman in white.

The woman in white sweated.

She thought that what she was doing now was somehow similar to what that young lad had done.

That was completely a different thing from what she was doing. Why would she feel it similar?

Many sects had done some investigation about the bloodshed. They all found that the mysterious girl had no problem in personality. She might be proud and arrogant, but she wasn't that violent. The only thing she hated the most was that someone

crossed the bottom line of hers!

Apparently, the woman in white was about to cross the line!

In fact, she had hesitated for times whether she would come do this or not!

[That is a huge risk to take!

Is it worth it?

Is it not?]

She thought about it again and again but eventually, there she was.

She finally met the person that existed in legend!

"I know who you are. I know what you have done." The woman in white took a breath in and said, "But I... Cannot let you go back."

They were face to face now.

They were less than three feet away from each other.

The woman in white was struggling in her mind. Her clear eyes showed her pain of not knowing what to choose. "I have a reason

that I cannot let you go... The situation in Chen-Xing City... As long as Wan of Clouds is there, there is chances for everything to get better... If you, Xiu of Heavens, go there too... I am afraid... that the situation would burst into a disaster. It will become unpredictable."

She became calm and steady while she said it. She was tough. "I cannot let you through."

Xiu of Heavens stared at the woman in white. She found that the woman was as decisive as she was.

"Why a woman bewilders another?" Xiu of Heavens felt soft and sighed.

She knew that decisiveness.

She understood it!

It was exactly how she felt to her master.

It was something she held for the person she loved the most.

‘I can do anything for you!

Even to die and beyond redemption!’

It was the same feeling.

Xiu-Er sighed slightly. Her eyes turned softer as she said, "Among those men, one of them is the person you love. Is it?"

She asked again, "The man you love?"

She was simply asking about it. She didn't want to get any information or something. That was actually a question that could lead to lots of information!

The woman in white had the same feeling with Xiu of Heavens. Behind her mask, she showed embarrassment and bashfulness. [Is he the person I love?]

She was confused. She couldn't be sure. She hesitated but eventually nodded.

In her heart, she said to herself, [It was just an excuse.]

...

Chapter 376: Remove the Restraint?

"Who is he?" Xiu of Heavens said, "Give me his name. I can assure you he will not die! My promise do have power!"

She blandly spoke, "I don't want to remove the restraint now. You don't want your man die. I have to get pass. So, let's split the difference. I will save his life. You will let me pass, and I will complete my mission. If you agree, we have a deal."

"That is the most I can give now." Xiu-Er looked at the woman in white. "I think you know that I am capable to rush over you. It is just... Never mind. You know who I am, and you know what I have done. But you still take such risk for the man you love, so I will make a promise for you."

"We are both women."

Xiu-Er's eyes turned soft. "I know such feeling."

The woman in white showed fluid glance.

She smiled bitterly.

[What a good deal. If he isn't who he is, maybe I will agree!

However, I can only give myself a bitter smile!]

"I know you are serious about it. I trust every word of you, but I am sorry. You are not able to save his life." The woman took a breath in and said, "You just can't."

Xiu of Heavens shook and laughed. She obviously thought it hilarious.

[Do you think there is actually somebody I am not able to save in this world?]

"You are a capable figure in the Land of Han-Yang. Almost every single person in this world can be under your control. But the man I want to save is absolutely an exception!" The woman in white was calm and steady.

"Oh, really? Is there a person like that? I do not know it!" Xiu-Er didn't believe it, but she was interested in it. She wondered who would be the man that Xiu of Heavens couldn't save in the world!

"Lady, I know pretty well about your true capability. I am more or less a capable one myself. Why would I refuse if I know you can save him?" the woman in white asked.

What she said had surprised Xiu-Er. The woman wasn't some ordinary figure. Except Xiu-Er, Wan-Er and Master Bai, she must be the strongest figure in the world. How could the person she wanted to protect be just a normal person!

"No matter what, just tell me his name. Even though you are

being reasonable, I just cannot trust you. I don't believe there is anyone I cannot save!" Xiu-Er was being stubborn.

The woman in white smiled bitterly and said, "His name is Feng Zhiling."

Xiu-Er coughed. She felt dry in throat.

She didn't know what to say.

[Feng Zhiling!]

Xiu-Er bitterly smile. "So he is. No wonder you said I couldn't save him."

She nodded. "That is right. I cannot save his life."

The House of the Chaotic Storms stirred up the disturbance in the world, and Feng Zhiling was the center of all. No matter how things would go, Feng Zhiling was bound to die.

That was the unchangeable part of the plan.

Even if the House of the Chaotic Storms didn't plan to collapse the kingdom, Feng Zhiling would die many times, as he had too many supreme dan beads with him!

"Can you save his life, Lady Xiu-Er?" The woman in white asked.

Xiu-Er took in a deep breath as her eyes became sharp. "I guess this is not going to be soft today. You are looking for death!"

The meaning of that was clear to both of them.

Once Xiu-Er removed the restraint and became super powerful, she would vanish in the heavenly punishments.

However, the woman in white would die right now!

The woman in white shook her head. She didn't seem scared at all. She softly spoke "We are both women. Sometimes, women are silly. Now, I am in my silly moment."

Xiu-Er's eyes were filled with complicated expressions.

A woman had to be silly sometime in her life.

That hit her heart like lightning.

It hit her heart on the softest part.

She sighed. "You have to understand that even if you die here now, he has to die too. That is the fate. Why are you still willing to die since the result for him will just be the same? Why sacrifice

yourself!"

The woman in white shook her head softly. "It is not the same. At least I die for him. I tried. I will die before he does. I won't be able to hear his death then!"

"I will not hear his death, so I will not feel sad."

Xiu-Er was shocked as she murmured, "Good! Fantastic. It is a shame. I may let him live if this is not for my master's great plan."

"If things weren't like this, maybe we two can be good friends, sisters. Look what fates have done."

"However... I have no choice now. I believe you will be free when you die. I will die after you. That is after all your honor!" There was fire dancing in Xiu-Er's eyes.

That was real fire.

That was fire from deep inside her soul!

She was about to remove the restraint. She spoke word by word, "... It is your honor, so is mine! There are not many women whom I think are real women... You are absolutely one real woman!"

"I understand you! So I am going to kill you!"

The woman in white blandly smiled. "Thanks for understanding."

"Thanks for fulfilling my wish!"

She stepped backward and then pulled out a sword.

The sword was limp in front of her chest.

That was enough talking.

What left to be done was to fight.

The fire in Xiu-Er's eyes were nearly bursting out.

That was her special gift. Her Destined Fire!

Once she used it, that meant she removed the restraint. She would become absolutely invincible in this world!

Xiu-Er's eyes were filled with sentiments, helplessness and lament.

If she had another choice, she would never use the Destined Fire. However, she had to use it to get pass this.

She didn't want to die. She had been imagining the future when

she and Master Bai lived for thousands after thousands of years, giving birth to children for thousands of generations.

However, that woman stopped her!

In this low-class realm, she showed up as a superior cultivator from the higher realm!

She was a superior cultivator that Xiu-Er could never defeat if she didn't remove the restraint!

Xiu-Er had nothing to do but only to remove the restraint.

However, it meant she had to give up on all the hopes she had for the future.

The problem was that she couldn't hate that woman, even though the woman made her lose her future.

They both wanted to help the men they loved!

They were both women!

...

Chapter 377: Two Wonderful Beauties!

Why would a woman bewilder another woman? A woman will bewilder another woman for the man she loved, and the woman will be bewildered for her beloved one too!

"If Wan-Er is here... Or Master is here..." Xiu-Er bitterly smiled. She then stretched her arms and gently spoke, "Phoenix covers the sky with its tweet shocking the world. The real fire..."

The fire was about to burst on her body...

At this moment, a figure rushed over rapidly from far away. She hurriedly shouted when she was still hundreds of miles away. "Stop it!"

She sounded in a hurry, like she was going to spit out blood!

That was Wan of Clouds!

Wan-Er had been rushing over like lightning!

When she was moving, her sleeves actually made the sound of thunders.

That was some impressive vigor!

Only cultivators who nearly reached the Dao Origin Stage could

make it.

Wan-Er actually showed such a thing in the Land of Han-Yang. She wouldn't have done it if she didn't have to. That showed how urgent she was at that moment!

She had never seen her master being so upset before.

That was the first time!

Her master had never made any false prediction before for thousands of years.

Since he said so, Xiu-Er must be in trouble, big trouble!

Xiu-Er was very likely in some very dangerous situation!

Facing such a situation, she would very likely remove the restraint! That was the last thing Master Bai and Wan-Er wanted to see!

Thus, Wan-Er rushed all along like lightning, like she was running for life.

When she got out off the city and moved ahead further, she finally sensed Xiu-Er. She didn't dare to delay, so she flew ahead rushing! She then felt a mass of energy emitting like it was going to explode at any second!

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er had been together for so many years. They knew each other so well. Wan-Er knew that Xiu-Er was in trouble and she was about to remove the restraint!

She then shouted loudly before she could get any closer to them. "Stop it! Don't do it!"

And then she fell between Xiu-Er and the woman in white like a falling meteorolite!

It was like a spear falling down from the sky!

"Xiu-Er!" Wan-Er looked at Xiu-Er and screamed, "Hold!"

She didn't need to say anything more. Xiu-Er shouted and then the fire on her suddenly disappeared. The fire in her eyes started to flow back like water deep into her eyes.

The next moment, she turned aside her head.

"Wah! Wahhhh..."

Six times, she spat out blood. It made the ground all red. Where the blood went in the ground, it appeared like it was burned!

After spitting out the blood, Xiu-Er's face turned pale. She shook and then nearly fell down to the ground.

"Go to hell!" Wan-Er saw Xiu-Er in misery and she felt painful in heart. She waved her hand and shouted, "Destined Sword!"

- Clang! -

A sword showed up in front of Wan-Er's chest with cold light. - Shoot! - It went to her hand. She waved the sword and then it turned into the shape of a flower emitting thousands of cold sword lights!

At the same time, she shouted, "Xiu-Er! Destined Fire Sword!"

The sword light flashed and she was about to attack.

She had always been gentle, but now she wanted to kill.

She hated the woman in white and she wanted her dead!

Wan and Xiu were strong all the same, restrained or not. Since Xiu-Er couldn't defeat the woman, nor could Wan-Er. However, if they fought together, things might be different!

They were both less than one percent powerful as they were unrestrained, however, when they fought together, they could be over ten percent as powerful. They had their Destined Weapons too. It wouldn't be hard to kill the woman in white. It would only take some time!

They fought together. Master Bai had once said something about this...

Two wonderful beauties!

However...

"Wait..." Xiu-Er coughed and her face turned red. She insisted, "Don't kill her!"

Wan-Er was surprised. She turned around to look at Xiu-Er. "You... She nearly forced you to remove the restraint. You may have died and vanished forever... You... You don't want her dead? Why not?"

Xiu-Er coughed and said, "She... She knew who we are. She knew what would happen. But she still insists. She... She did it for her man..."

Wan-Er turned silent.

Maybe only she understood Xiu-Er.

[She knew who we are, so she knew what would cost her to do such a thing today! However, she did it, without hesitation.

She has a simple reason. Her man!

We are also doing whatever we can for the one we love!

We suffered the punishments, made chaos, for our beloved one!

We will die for him!

Again and again, for thousands of years, who knows how we feel?]

The woman in white looked at Wan-Er and Xiu-Er with complicated expression. She smiled and said, "Lady Wan-Er is here too. That is a surprise. Since you are both here, why don't you both stay."

She was being gentle. "That is perfect. We make a clear line between them. Let the men die for their own businesses. We, sisters, just sit here and have some nice chat. What do you think?"

Wan-Er coldly spoke, "You can drink whatever you want. We need drink tea."

The woman in white smiled. "There is always a beginning for everything. Maybe after the tea today, you two will feel hard to leave it..."

The woman in white was, as expected, Bing Xinyue.

Ye Xiao had worked so hard for an entire night for her. Bing Xinyue surely felt moved.

However, the man was so proud. She couldn't say anything.

Besides, she needed to concern about her own position, and her disciple's position...

She could only watch the man leave and then secretly do something for him.

She didn't want to do it in the Chen-Xing City.

Feng Zhiling would know it if she did. He would stop her. Even though he knew he wasn't able to, he would try his best to stop her. That was his pride and dignity!

That was why she decided to stop Xiu of Heavens outside the city.

The murders for thousands of years of the House of the Chaotic Storms were in the charge of Xiu of Heavens! If she wasn't there, Feng Zhiling would be released from at least half of his depression!

It would reduce half the danger to him.

At least, Wan of Clouds was a gentle and soft one. She wouldn't just kill somebody cold bloodedly.

Bing Xinyue knew what she would face, but she still did it.

...

Chapter 378: Fortune Map of Mountain and Rivers

She did it. She did successfully stop Xiu of Heavens!

If Wan of Clouds didn't show up, Xiu of Heavens would eventually remove the restraint. Although Bing Xinyue would die, Xiu of Heavens would die after her!

However, at the moment, she had to face Xiu of Heavens and Wan of Clouds at the same time. She felt helpless.

They were both legendary figures.

She might be able to handle it for some time if Wan and Xiu were just simply fighting together, but if they operated some special martial art to upgrade their joint force, Bing Xinyue would definitely fail. However, she didn't fear death. The longer she delayed them, the more possible he could get away from it. No matter how things would end, she would have no regret to it...

However, the next moment, things went to an unexpected direction again.

Wan-Er murmured, "Since you don't want to kill her, ..."

Suddenly, she shook her wrist. The sword disappeared. After that, a picture scroll showed up in her hand. It was stretching out.

She shouted, "Xiu-Er!"

Xiu of Heavens didn't hesitate. She waved her hand too and caught the other side of the scroll. At the same time, they both shouted. A stream of white light emitted out from their hands.

The light slowly went into the scroll.

That scroll suddenly shined with bright lights. - Boom! - Colorful lights came out after. That was some extremely beautiful lights. Within seconds, it filled up the entire space!

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er disappeared under the watch of Bing Xinyue.

"Let's see in Chen-Xing City."

Wan-Er added, "You cannot stop us."

Bing Xinyue only felt dizzy. When she was back to herself, she couldn't find anybody there anymore.

What was it? Wan and Xiu might be some super cultivators in this world, but it was just in this world. For Bing Xinyue, the restrained Xiu and Wan were never strong opponents. They should never be able to just disappear in front of her. But what just happened then?

The next moment, what terrified her the most happened. In

front of her, it was obviously the Chen-Xing City!

Bing Xinyue surely wouldn't mistake it.

Royal house, House of Zuo, Crown Prince's Palace, and... There was Chu Chu's residence too. Also, she saw Ling-Bao Hall!

"I should be outside the city. How can I suddenly come inside the city instantly?" Bing Xinyue was lost in thoughts. "This must be an illusion. I must be in some delusion!"

However, everything was so real in this place.

Bing Xinyue touched the wall beside her. It was hard and rough.

"What is this? What kind of magic is this! How can it be so real?!"

Bing Xinyue bit on her tongue. She felt pain. Suddenly ,she shouted and rushed up like an arrow. She reached up to a thousand meters high in the sky!

[No matter what illusion it is, if I stand high enough in the sky looking down back on it, how could it still cover my sight! Since you can make an entire Chen-Xing City, can you make the whole Kingdom of Chen?]

However, as she looked down from high in the sky, what was in her sight was still the Chen-Xing City as she could remembered.

The land around the city was also the same. It was all like she remembered!

It was completely the same.

It did not look fake at all!

If that was magic, it must be powerful enough to break the rule of nature!

Bing Xinyue stayed in the sky thinking.

She was sure that it was an illusion. She just kept thinking about how she could break it.

The next moment, her pupils in eyes stretched.

From Ling-Bao Hall, there came out dense smoke!

A strong aura of killing spread out from that place.

There seemed to be thousands of men fighting!

Bing Xinyue calmed down and didn't believe it. [It must be illusions! It only shows me whatever I am thinking about! Whatever I am worried about, it will show up! How come nowhere else will there be a fight but only Ling-Bao Hall? Things in dreams

are fake, but what I am dreaming will become truth!"

She always had a clear mind. She had never been covered by illusions.

The next moment, she couldn't help but open her eyes widely.

From that smoke, there was some black dots rushing out like crazy.

It was rushing rapidly.

After them were lots of black dots chasing them.

The black dots kept moving rapidly, escaping from the hunt... Everywhere turned red...

After they rushed out a thousand meters, Bing Xinyue finally confirmed that they were humans!

They were getting closer and closer...

The first black dot who led the group was exactly Feng Zhiling, Monarch of the Ling-Bao Hall!

Beside him there was two people. He only had two people with him now...

The three of them kept rushing forward like lightning. After them there were lots of assassins in black like tides. They kept rushing over to them. On the way where the three of them rushing was over, there were assassins that showed up...

Sword lights were like lightning. Sword breath blew up the sky. All attacks got to Feng Zhiling and his men.

Feng Zhiling kept rushing ahead. His body was already full of wounds and blood.

He kept rushing and blood kept coming down from his body.

Wherever he went, there was a path of blood on the floor!

It was all red!

It was not bad enough to move Bing Xinyue yet.

However, on Feng Zhiling's face, it wasn't fear or panic. He only showed coldness, calmness and steadiness.

Even though he was under such circumstance, even though he was running in the end of his life, he was still showing a calm and cold face. He was proud as usual!

That was a pride that came from the peak of all!

[Even though I am badly wounded, my pride is high upon the clouds!]

He just kept rushing forward, enduring everything that struck to them.

As he moved ahead, blood came out all along!

Bing Xinyue felt her heart in pain. She kept reminding herself, "That is fake! This is an illusion! It is not in the Chen-Xing City! Absolutely not..."

At the moment, Feng Zhiling had reached a street. Assassins in black came out from the roofs of the houses on both sides like magic. Endless sword lights, sword rains, strikes and chops fell down crazily to him at the same time.

...

Chapter 379: Trapped!

During the fight of Feng Zhiling and his men, one arm after another flew up apart from the bodies, and one head after another rolled up apart from the shoulders. On the floor, there were some bodies without heads, but only with blood jetting out from their necks.

As for Feng Zhiling and his men, they had slaughtered many people while they were wounded many times.

When they made a turn in the street, they would go to a forest not far away.

At this moment, even though Bing Xinyue knew it was only an illusion, she felt sweat in her hands. She kept murmuring in mind, [Hurry! Hurry up... Take a turn there. You will be safe in that forest...]

Finally, Feng Zhiling shouted and then flew up all of a sudden like a black arrow shooting up. He boosted towards the corner where they could take a turn to the forest. When they got past that corner, they would be in the forest. That would give them a much bigger chance to survive.

At this moment, Bing Xinyue felt some terrible discomposure in her heart.

She looked up in panic only to find that there was a man in black standing on the roof like a great mountain. In his hand was a

sword shining an eye-dazzling light!

The sword was covered by flowing lights. It was luminiferous. It even shined over the sun!

When Bing Xinyue noticed that man, the sword had already flown out like a shooting star!

That sword was so fast that it even moved over time and space!

It was a sword strike that went beyond time and space!

The lights on it had only shined, yet it was already shot out!

Feng Zhiling had reached the highest point in the air. He was in a limited speed already. It would only take him a second to fall down and get to the forest.

At this moment, the sword was like a shooting star coming to him. It went through Feng Zhiling's body from his back in an instant!

It didn't even slow down a bit; it entered from his back and left from his chest!

There was the warm blood of Feng Zhiling's heart on the sword. The sword with blood on it shined with a cruel red. It didn't slow down, only shot out for another hundreds of meters until it

stabbed into a tree.

Bing Xinyue saw it and suddenly felt all broken inside her!

In the sky, Feng Zhiling stopped in the air.

His slim body was just hanging in the sky. He looked down and saw his empty chest.

His face was still calm and peaceful, and his eyes were still cold and steady. He didn't show any panic at all.

It seemed he didn't care about life or death at all!

Looking at the hole in his chest, Feng Zhiling made a weird smile. He sighed. He looked tired and lonely.

He didn't make a sound.

He just looked up to the sky silently.

On his face, that was pride in peace.

His dim and lifeless eyes were still filled with pride and loneliness.

He just stayed in the air, looking up to far away. The coldness and

loneliness in his eyes, the pride and toughness on his face, seemed to form into some words from his heart.

‘In the world, only people betrayed me, I have never betrayed others! That is my pride!’

‘When people are in danger, I tried my best to help! When my country was in danger, I did what I can! Now that I end up this way, nobody stood up to help me, but I never regret!’

He didn’t say any of these words.

However, the pride and vigor he showed, which were almost reaching the sky to the heavens, had delivered it well.

Bing Xinyue’s heart stopped beating at the moment.

She opened her mouth, looking obsessively at the figure in the sky.

Finally...

Feng Zhiling couldn’t keep staying in the air anymore. He was in the same gesture, only falling down to the ground.

He was like a kite without string.

His black hair was blown up by the wild wind, flowing in the air. When he was falling, his head was still raised up. He still kept the pride that he looked down upon all in the world!

In Bing Xinyue's heart, there was only sorrow.

Endless assassins in black came out with swords shining colorful lights. They were fierce and rushing over to Feng Zhiling's falling body.

The sword lights shone along with the glow of the sun.

Their swords chopped down. Apparently, they were trying to dismember his body.

That figure had lost its power to resist... It had lost its energy to live as it kept falling down silently.

"No!"

Bing Xinyue couldn't stand it anymore. She didn't care whether it was an illusion or not. She stopped thinking about whether it was reasonable or not. She could not keep calm anymore. She screamed out with sadness. She rushed down like a long rainbow crossing the land! She was fast like lightning!

She rushed over to the body that was surrounded by sword lights!

She rushed over due to the pain in her heart.

She could feel that her heart had been torn apart into hundreds of pieces. It was the kind of pain that would last forever!

"You all should go die!"

She rushed into them and held the body.

On her face, there was only vigor of righteousness!

His body was still warm.

However, he had no breaths anymore. His body was getting colder and colder.

Only his eyes were still looking forward with calm and coldness.

Bing Xinyue was nearly broken down!

She looked at her own hands that were quivering. She hated herself because she didn't do anything to help earlier. She only found that on her hands there was only blood, Feng Zhiling's blood!

Bing Xinyue was lost in sorrow and shouted to the sky. Suddenly, she pulled out her sword. - Clang! - She silently rushed into the

crowd of assassins in black with red eyes, and then she shouted, "All of you should go to hell! Die! Die! Die!!"

She didn't know that she had burst into her extreme cultivation power. In the Land of Han-Yang, how could the world hold such power! However, the world she was in didn't collapse!

She was immersed into the sorrow of losing Feng Zhiling and could think of nothing else!

...

On the top of the ice mountain, Wan-Er and Xiu-Er took a breath out lightly. They waved their hands and the colorful lights were gone.

It was still the picture scroll in Wan-Er's hand.

She held it in hand gently. Such a delicate scroll.

In fact, they never had disappeared in front of Bing Xinyue. Things were not like Bing Xinyue had seen. It was Bing Xinyue who disappeared. She was dragged into the scroll herself!

What a treasure. It actually dragged a super cultivator like Bing Xinyue into it. How splendid!

"Finally, we made it," Wan-Er said lightly, "this woman... Sigh."

...

Chapter 380: Visitors?

Xiu-Er was worried as she said, "Is she going to be okay? She has been dragged into the Fortune Map of Mountains and Rivers."

Wan-Er smiled and said, "How could she not? Don't you remember how many people have been taken into this Fortune Map of Mountains and Rivers? Did anything happen to them?"

Xiu-Er took a breath out with relief, "That's good. It will be such a shame for such a woman to suffer any misfortune."

Wan-Er nodded and smiled.

Suddenly, Xiu-Er seemed jealous and she said, "Wan-Er, you are so good. You actually took the map with you. The way Master treats you really makes me jealous!"

Wan-Er humphed and spoke with jealousy too, "Pah. It should be me who are jealous! You are the good one. Master sensed that something wrong happened to you, so he was so worried. He even gave me the Fortune Map of Mountains and Rivers. He urged me to save you. It is my first time to see Master in such a hurry like that for all these years! He is worried for you. Do you understand?"

Xiu-Er was stunned and she said, "Really?" On her face she showed softness and happiness. She was asking a question, and she acted like a baby girl being shy.

"Absolutely. Now you know who should be the jealous one, don't you?" Wan-Er rolled her eyes and said, "Look at the stupid infatuated face. Cut it off!"

Xiu-Er was happy and she said, "Master is so nice... Cough... Puff..."

She was so happy, but then started to cough. She coughed out blood.

"You... You had done one third of the removing process?" Wan-Er widely opened her eyes, "Don't move! Do not move a bit! You silly girl!"

She quickly took out a dan bead and fed it to Xiu-Er. She murmured, "Look at you. Even if she could stop you for a while, she wouldn't push you to death. At least she is not able to kill you... You just need to buy more time and there will be opportunity... The day Master planned is four days later. Why are you in such hurry? I truly have no words for you..."

Xiu-Er's face turned pale and she smiled. "I can't be even a bit late. We... How can we let Master down? I, Xiu-Er... will never let Master down. Not even a bit..."

"Like that woman just now. She could die for her man. My heart is similar to hers."

Xiu-Er took a breath and went on, "The man has such a woman,

our Master does too!"

"You fool..." Wan-Er was annoyed and worried. "Do not speak. Don't you know your own situation now?"

While she was speaking, she spread her spiritual mind to sense something around. Suddenly, her eyes lit up. "There is a cave on this ice mountain. That's a good place to go... Come!"

She held Xiu-Er up and then rushed ahead.

They got into the cave.

"Hmm? I wonder who made this cave. It is connected to all directions. Such a spacious room. It is absolutely not natural..."

Wan-Er was satisfied and she looked around, "Xiu-Er, start your martial art right now. Do not think of anything else. Use the World Righteous Heart to suppress the one third of the restraint power. I will protect you. Don't worry. Just take care of it first!"

Xiu-Er nodded and sat cross-legged.

The impact on her had gone to a level that she had to deal with it now!

If she delayed it longer, she would have to face the Nine Extreme Punishments!

Wan-Er was guarding her. She looked around with alert.

They didn't know that it was exactly Feng Zhiling, Feng Monarch, who made this cave!

It was just a few months earlier in this cave.

At that time, he was much weaker than he was now, yet he killed the Dao Origin Stage cultivator, Gu Jinlong!

He did it with good luck though!

When Wan-Er and Xiu-Er got into the cave, it was already late in the morning.

In fact, it was noon of the third day after the auction ended! The sun was right at the highest point in the sky!

...

In Ling-Bao Hall, Ning Biluo, Ye Xiao and others had rested for half a night.

Liu Changjun was recovering fast after taking a supreme Pei-Yuan dan bead and operating his own martial art himself. He would be recovered to a good condition after another few hours. The supreme Pei-Yuan dan was the best medicine for him.

However, not everyone would use supreme dan beads like this. It might be too much a waste.

At this moment, someone came to report.

"Men representing the five clans has come for visit."

"Five clans?" Ye Xiao frowned. He was surprised.

"Yes. Long Clan, Dongfang Clan, Ximen clan, Beigong Clan, Song Clan. Five clans under Long Clan, Long Tianyun's lead. They are to meet Boss Wan and Feng Monarch."

It was an assassin who came in to report. He was slim and fit.

He had reported clearly.

As Ning Biluo once had said, 'If a man becomes a well-known assassin, there will be no job that he cannot do well in.'

As expected, this assassin had been doing well as a guard. It was a waste to use a man like him this way though.

"What are they here for?" Ye Xiao looked at Liu Changjun. Liu Changjun was confused too.

It was Ning Biluo who took charge of the five clans business the

other night. Ning Biluo had disappeared, but he was surely around Ling-Bao Hall. However, nobody could find him except if he showed up himself or Ye Xiao made him to. No one else could do it.

"Ning," Ye Xiao spoke in heavy voice.

A black shadow moved. Ning Biluo showed up beside Ye Xiao like a ghost. He looked at Ye Xiao. Under Ye Xiao's watch with inquiry, Ning Biluo said, "Last night, they felt stressed. They realized they could trust no other sects or forces. I reckon they must be here to seek for alliance and help."

"Alliance? Help? Is it possible?" Ye Xiao frowned.

Apparently, Ye Xiao was not a man with schemes. If Zuo Wuji was here, he would instantly figure out what Ning Biluo might have done the other night. Although Zuo Wuji wasn't a man of martial world and he knew little about the dirty businesses among sects and other forces, he knew things about people. Where there was people, there was martial art, there was love and hate, right and wrong, allies and enemies. It was the same in the court. What decided all was profits. Ye Xiao knew it too, but he was too proud to think much of it.

Now that he wanted to think more about it, there was not much time for him.

...

Chapter 381: Burning Incense?

"Let me have a look." Wan Zhenghao stood up and went out with his fat swaying on his body.

Even Boss Wan was much better than Ye Xiao in schemes and the way to deal with people. That was what he had been doing for thousands of years after all. Ye Xiao might have been one of the most powerful figures among cultivators, but he actually knew little about worldly concerns!

Boss Wan didn't feel quite comfortable staying around here and he felt stressful. That was another reason.

In the midnight of that day, after Ye Xiao arranged everything well, he asked something casually. What he said led to a dumbfounding thing.

"Wan, you have been the richest man in the Land of Han-Yang for so many years, why haven't you raised your own forces? Why don't you recruit some superior cultivators as your men? Your wealth must be beyond all those kingdoms. You should have had some stronger men!"

Ye Xiao felt confused about it.

A rich man as Wan Zhenghao, who was most scared of death, actually didn't have any master level Sky Origin Stage guards around him. That was against the nature!

Usually, since Wan Zhenghao wasn't surrounded by lots of superior cultivators, he should at least have several super powerful cultivators...

Wealthy and capable like him, he should easily get himself some people as long as he asked for it. Money could always drive gods or ghosts. It was the rule of everywhere. Ling-Bao Hall was wealthy enough to feed more people!

Wan Zhenghao looked upset. "Of course I wanted some. I am not a fool. But it was Gu Jinglong who was in charge... He didn't allow me to have my guards. I found one, he killed one..."

Ye Xiao felt it weird and said, "All these years, you have been the richest man in this land. I am sure there should be many people who wanted to rob you? What would you do if somebody got to you?"

"Well... Then..." Wan Zhenghao's face turned red.

"What? You can't say it?"

"Yes, I can. It is just... Gu told me that I was the one who was chosen by gods, so I only needed to burn some incense..." Wan Zhenghao stuttered.

"You what? You are what? Burn incense?" Ye Xiao was surprised by the unexpected answer, "What incense?"

He thought, [My god. That is why I always can see him burn incense and kowtow sometimes... There is a reason for that?]

Wan Zhenghao coughed and said, "At that time, Gu told me that I was chosen by gods. I would have life that never ended and wealth that never dried. No matter what trouble I met, I just needed to burn the incense he gave to me and everything would be fine... However, I have to use it when things are in real danger. If I use it casually, it will reduce the blessings I got from gods. That is what I have been doing... Money can solve many things, but sometimes, when I met something that cannot be solved by money, I burned that incense. It worked though. When I burned that incense, people who made trouble for me died..."

"Those that money couldn't solve were all solved after..."

"As time passes, for thousands of years, there have never been anybody who dared to mess with Ling-Bao Hall. How do you think we survive in this Land of Han-Yang ignoring all those kingdoms? We never support any of them, and no matter who messed with us, they all eventually died. For all these years, when you mess with House of the Chaotic Storms, you can still be alive as long as you swear loyalty to them. However, whoever messed with Ling-Bao Hall all died! So when you decided to support Kingdom of Chen, I was worried. But I didn't think too much about it then," Wan Zhenghao said.

Boss Wang clicked his tongue. Apparently, he was quite proud of his past. However, he then sighed and said, "However, I have recently burned a lot incense, but nothing changed. I wonder if

Master Gu is busy recently so he doesn't have time for us..."

"Burn some incense... Uh! Hahahaha..." Ye Xiao was shocked and then burst into laughter.

With his Dao Origin Stage capability, It was quite easy for Gu Jinlong to put a bit of his spiritual mind on items.

When somebody touched that item, Gu Jinlong would sense it. That was what he had done to Ye Xiao when he gave Ye Xiao the space ring!

However, that was some weird thing.

As the richest man in the Land of Han-Yang, Wan Zhenghao should be good at solving problems with money, yet he actually burned incense to solve his problems when money didn't work, and he believed that he was chosen by gods. That shocked Ye Xiao.

[What the hell. A super fat guy? Chosen by gods? Tell me about it!]

However, now Ye Xiao knew the answer to his questions all these days. He finally knew how Wan Zhenghao got through dangerous situations before. That was reasonable. Powerful as Gu Jinlong, it should be easy for him to take down anybody who threatened Ling-Bao Hall.

"Screw it. Incense burning..." Ye Xiao laughed and cursed,

"Bloody goddamn Gu Jinlong truly treated himself as a god..."

Wan Zhenghao's face turned red. At the moment, Boss Wan finally realized that Gu Jinlong didn't hide and cultivate himself. That was bullsh*t. How could his sworn brother talk about him like this?

He understood why burning those incense wouldn't work anymore. His god had long left.

Even if he burned all the incense under the sky, it wouldn't help him any!

Wan Zhenghao didn't know that Gu Jinlong didn't just left; in fact, he had long vanished from the world. Even his soul was absorbed by the Egg. He could never answer Wan Zhenghao's requests...

His incense burning experience had become a joke for Ye Xiao to tell.

Wan Zhenghao blushed.

Ye Xiao laughed at him for a long time.

Feng Monarch put it this way. [I am being super depressed these days. Thank god I got this joke! Before all this mess ends, I can only live with this joke...]

He surely could count on that joke, but Boss Wan was embarrassed to death!

At the moment, as he heard that the five clans were here, he couldn't wait to go. He wanted to leave this awkward situation. He thought that the five clans had really helped him a big one. That was a weird thought though.

...

Chapter 382: Wishful Plan

Wan Zheng left for the guests, but after just a while, he had already returned.

He laughed and rubbed his hands. Apparently, he was satisfied.

"What is it? Are you really this happy?" Ye Xiao frowned and asked. It was such a difficult thing to be so happy at this moment.

"They are here for cooperation. They want us to support each other and get through this together." Wan Zhenghao shook the fat on his face. "That is such a great thing. It is like a pie in the sky... We have just been worrying about supports, now the five clans dropped in front of us... Heh, heh. God bless. I truly am the chosen one."

"Hmm? Cooperation?" Ye Xiao frowned and looked at Wan Zhenghao with questioning, "How? What do they want?"

"They want..." Wan Zhenghao explained it and then said, "They just want to see you in person... Hey, hey... That is..."

Ye Xiao became solemn. "How is their attitude?"

Wan Zhenghao awkwardly laughed, "Well, they are just as usual... The Eight Noble Clans... Nothing serious... It is a good thing for both of us. We work together, we both benefit..."

Ye Xiao's face turned dark.

He heard Wan Zhenghao. He knew the five clans had put on airs to Wan Zhenghao. They must be arrogant and even asked for many things. Wan Zhenghao knew that it was a dangerous moment, so he endured it even though five clans were pushing over. He must wanted to get through the danger in whatever price.

However, even though Wan Zhenghao was used to spend money, Ye Xiao didn't like it!

Ye Xiao knew Wan Zhenghao's personality, so he didn't blame him. He just blandly said, "I see. Wan, you go take some rest. They want to see me, then I will go greet them."

There was some sharp lights in his eyes.

The five clans were here for help, yet they dare to put on airs to Wan Zhenghao. How bold!

"Ning, Liu Changjun, come with me!"

He sounded decisive.

Ning Biluo and Liu Changjun were thrilled. [Master is going to play some suppression.

Who dares to threaten my men, should be able to bear the cost!]

They walked beside Ye Xiao out of the door.

...

The ten people who represented the five clans were sitting on the chairs of the vip hall cozily, drinking tea that was offered by Ling-Bao Hall.

They all felt so high-spirited and vigorous.

When they discussed about this plan, they had agree to a base line. They would see how Ling-Bao Hall reacted. If Ling-Bao Hall acted neither humble nor pushy, they would lower their positions to seek cooperation. They would even offer certain things to make it a deal. If Ling-Bao Hall acted soft, they would agree to just fight together equally against the enemy.

However, they never expected that Wan Zhenghao would be so nice. Wan Zhenghao actually lowered himself so much. The men from the five clans were smart ones. They came to a conclusion. [Ling-Bao Hall must be in a miserable situation. We are most welcomed here to offer cooperation.]

[That is great! That is a good thing for us. Maybe we will spend nothing to make this deal. We can even take something from them as the price of ‘helping’ them. Supreme dan beads are sure things. Treasures are all accepted.]

[Besides, we can just stay in Ling-Bao Hall. No matter what happens next, we can let Ling-Bao Hall go first. Ling-Bao Hall has great forces. Those guards in the auction, they are some unusual forces...]

[And we will not take any reckless moves before them...]

When they were all thinking about their wonderful plan, drinking tea, chatting, crossing legs, and having day dreams, they truly felt relieved.

Long Tianyun's fact was dark. He seemed in troubled.

[If Ling-Bao Hall was so easy to take advantage of, as the richest organization in the Land of Han-Yang, it should have been sucked up long ago. However, in the history, only House of the Chaotic Storms and Ling-Bao Hall have lived for thousands of years, even though many other forces died.

There are Master Bai, Wan of Clouds, and Xiu of Heavens in the House of the Chaotic Storms in House of the Chaotic Storms, so nobody could take it down. Ling-Bao Hall had no great figures, however, no matter who dared to mess with Ling-Bao Hall, they might be able to get something at the beginning, but if they don't stop and they keep asking for more, they will die. Ling-Bao Hall is even more horrible than House of the Chaotic Storms!

We are here asking for help, yet we actually tried to take the higher position. We want Ling-Bao Hall to fight first so that we can get some profits afterwards. Isn't it just asking for death?]

Long Tianyun knew that the man who was in charge of Ling-Bao Hall wasn't Wan Zhenghao the fat guy. It was Feng Monarch!

Feng Zhiling!

[Monarch Feng is not some normal figure.

The day in the auction, he actually moved House of the Chaotic Storm. He must be a very smart man.

Besides, he can make supreme dan beads. He took out so many supreme dan beads at the same time! That is incredible!

He must have a very special background!

Wan Zhenghao was the easiest one to deal with. He never like fights. He would rather give up something to make peace. However, Feng Monarch may be different.]

Long Tianyun didn't dare to let loose.

As Wan Zhenghao went back to the inner room, Long Tianyun felt apprehensive. He suddenly had a very ominous feeling

While they were chatting and having teas, the sound of steps clearly came from the inner hall.

...

Long Tianyun was solemn. He listened so carefully trying to tell how strong the man was.

The other nine people all stopped talking.

They were all superior figures in the five clans. They might be greedy, but the greediness didn't cover their smartness. Otherwise, the clans wouldn't have sent them here to represent their clans.

The footstep was getting closer.

They heard the footstep sound and felt surprised. As they could tell, the man who was walking over didn't seem powerful. He was actually so normal. Step by step, he was approaching.

...

Chapter 383: Overwhelming!

As the sound of footsteps got closer and closer, they felt heavier and heavier in hearts. They didn't know why.

It was like steps were all stamping on their hearts.

Three men!

They realized from the sound that there were three men walking over.

There was one in front leading the way, while the other two were both in his sides.

They walked in the same pace. They seemed normal but somehow felt like unusual. With no reason, they were making some oppressive aura around the room.

Especially the man who was walking in front. He walked without hesitation. Step by step, he walked just right over to them.

It was just the footsteps of a man, but it made everyone in the vip hall feel oppressed. They clearly felt that this man was so decisive.

It was overwhelming!

Just hearing the footsteps, they could feel that this man was

determined to do something. He was determined and decisive to walk ahead. He had the overwhelming aura of fierceness!

It felt like he would walk through anything, whether it was a mountain or a mountain of swords!

No hesitation!

No stops!

If there was a mountain in front of him, he would tread it down!

If it was a mountain of swords, he would break them all!

The steps sounded clearly. It was getting closer and closer. It was like the drumbeats in war. It was full of the overwhelming pride!

They were all shocked. They all sat straight right away!

The man just casually walked over, not even using any martial art. It sounded just like any normal man. However, they all knew that whoever was able to make such footsteps must be some world shocking figure!

He was never an ordinary man!

A shadow flashed in the entrance of the inner hall, and a figure

silently appeared.

As he stood tall, his eyes were looking down upon everything.

When he just showed up, he had already looked around and observed all the ten guys.

In his eyes, coldness, disdainful and scorn were emitted.

It was like a king looking at his courtiers.

At this moment, the ten guys felt the fierceness at the same time!

It was something from a much powerful man.

That man seemed to be used to it. He did it this way naturally.

And then he walked slowly to the most luxurious chair and sat down on it. He didn't hesitate. He wasn't acting; it seemed all his actions were natural.

When he sat down, he was facing the south. His eyes were filled with coldness, indifference, disdainful and disgust.

He looked so noble and distinguished.

He casually walked in strides and sat down. That was no inferior

at all.

Such man just gave everybody one feeling!

This man was like king to them!

[He is the conquerer!

No matter when!

No matter where!

No matter who!

No matter how!

Where I stand,

Should be where the king is!]

He silently sat there, not saying anything. Then, he finally did something; he crossed his legs. He was casual and leisure.

Ning Biluo and Liu Changjun stood behind him at the moment. They looked solemn and stood straight. In their eyes, there was indifference and coldness that looked like they wouldn't care even if all lives died in front of them.

The three of them arrived and showed the men from the five clans severity. They didn't say anything. They didn't need to. It worked better than words.

As the Monarch, Feng Zhiling hadn't said anything yet. Ning and Liu would never say anything first. The men from the five clans didn't say anything either. Well, they didn't know what to say. They were shocked and terrified!

It was a simple reason. They found that Ling-Bao Hall was never weak as they thought. The three men who had just showed up had shown them everything!

They recognized Liu Changjun. He was the one with coldest face, Liu Changjun. He used to be one of the top ten assassins in the world, but now, he was working in Ling-Bao Hall. He was the one who took charge of the security work during the auction earlier.

When the Sunlight Sect wanted to snatch the Supreme Dan bead by suppressing others, Liu Changjun didn't fear anything. If House of the Chaotic Storms didn't get involved, Liu Changjun would make the first strike against Sunlight Sect. His courage was enough to make him a big figure, let alone his capabilities. He used to be one of the top ten assassins, so he must be strong.

The one who sat in the middle, they knew him too. He was the real boss of Ling-Bao Hall, Feng Zhiling. He had shown himself in the auction, but only when he needed to ask for cooperation with the House of the Chaotic Storms. People had just seen a side of him

or just a small part of his face, but they knew so little about him. They didn't know where he came from, who he really was, what he was, who his master was, what his background was, how strong he was in cultivation. They knew nothing about him. They only knew that he was a wise man, who had real wise methods. He could move the House of the Chaotic Storms in such a short time. He must be very good at negotiation. Today, they saw him again. He was so overwhelming and vigorous. He was some extraordinary figure for sure.

In fact, the last one was the one they completely had never seen before. His face was cold and he felt strange. They looked at him and didn't found him special. However, they were all shocked when they thought about it for a while. They had seen him just now, yet they didn't remember anything about him. If they didn't look at him again, they could hardly sense him. That was weird to them.

There were two possible reasons for it. First, he was cultivating some very strange martial art that could affect people's eyes. Second, he was so strong that it was far beyond their knowledge.

The guys from the five clans surely chose to believe that his martial art was special. They didn't want this man to be much powerful than all of them.

The three men of Ling-Bao Hall were so strong and extraordinary. That was the truth they couldn't deny. It cooled down the air in the room all of a sudden.

The men from the five clans didn't know that Ning Biluo was also

surprised.

He wasn't surprised because of the guys from the five clans. He was surprised by Feng Zhiling, Feng Monarch!

He knew that Feng Monarch was actually Lord Ye.

He was Ye Xiao, son of Ye Nantian, the great General Ye.

However, the overwhelming vigor that Ye Xiao showed up at the moment was even fiercer than his father... Even the great general, who had controlled millions of soldiers and shocked the entire Land of Han-Yang, couldn't be as overwhelming like him.

...

Chapter 384: Force!

According to the information Ning Biluo had gathered, about half a year earlier, this young Lord Ye was still one of the 'three lords in town'. He was just like a foppish young lord. However, now he suddenly became such a figure.

[No matter how deep and how good he is at hiding himself, it is nearly impossible to do so.

How does he make such an overwhelming vigor?

How can he do it?

Such fierce vigor is invulnerable!]

Ning Biluo was on Ye Xiao's side. He was shocked by Ye Xiao's vigor, but he was just surprised.

The ten people from the five clans had totally different feelings. They suddenly felt like they were a head shorter than others.

Although Feng Monarch hadn't said anything to them yet, he had suppressed them so hard already.

The two guys behind him...

The ten of them had the same feeling for them.

[They don't look like... humans!

They are two sharp swords!

They were two superior swords, one apparent, while the other was latent!

They were just standing there, yet they had made the ten superior cultivators feel like they were in some dangerous jungle of swords and knives. As they looked to their eyes, they felt the terror from the sword blades. They knew there were no swords threatening them, yet they just felt it so real.

It felt like there would be a marvelous sword that would touch them and cut their skins at any second...

They felt cold on their backs.

They were scared!

Superior cultivators!

Top superior master level cultivators!

They had the same instinct!

Guarded by these two, even if Feng Monarch was among million enemies in the battle, he could just be casually watching everything with his hands on his back. Maybe he could just walk from one side to another casually with his hands on the back all the time.

And he would never get injured.

Lots of dead bodies would be left behind him!

[How come? Who are those guys?

Liu Changjun was one of the top ten assassins in the world. He may be good in martial arts and he had shown his braveness and vigor in the auction, but how does he become powerful like this?

Is it the other guy who made this?

The other guy stimulated Liu Changjun's potential and then they stood together to make such an overwhelming aura?

However, Liu Changjun should be one of the top ten most powerful cultivators in the world. If there was anybody who could stimulate him, what would he be? How strong should he be?!!]

The ten guys from the five clans all thought of this. They were all terrified. Even though they didn't really feel that there were swords on their throats, they felt scared and terrified!

Among them, Long Tianyun had the strongest feeling!

Since he knew Feng Monarch would come out, he felt himself fell down with a cold heart.

Right before Feng Monarch showed up, he realized Ling-Bao Hall would never just act so weak. They had their ace card for sure. However, he wished that he could be lucky enough. That was reasonable.

When Feng Zhiling's footsteps sounded, his beautiful dream broke down. When Feng Zhiling showed up in the hall, Long Tianyun finally had a right conclusion.

His conjecture was totally wrong!

He had never thought that Feng Monarch was such a proud, arrogant and overwhelming figure!

That was Feng Zhiling's first image in Long Tianyun.

[How could such a man kneel down in front of others? Especially... we have been real rude to Wan Zhenghao... We acted too proud!

That was a huge mistake!]

When the feeling of sword strikes were haunting them, Long Tianyun understood another thing. [Feng Monarch is simply doing this as a return to our stupid pridefulness!]

He had never thought that the counterattack from Ling-Bao Hall would come so soon and fiercely!

Ye Xiao sat on that chair. His face was calm. Suddenly, he reached out his hand and a maid behind him put a towel on it. He wiped his hands and then the maid took the towel back.

Ye Xiao then took up a cup of tea, removed the cover, and blew it gently to make the tea smelled good. Finally, he drank a lot of it.

He did all this like he didn't see anybody else in the room, like there weren't a bunch of people waiting for him to speak.

He acted like he was born to be late and he was born to be waiting for.

Others should all wait for him and please him!

He acted like he had such privilege that gods gave to him!

After finished the whole drinking tea stuff, he blandly smiled. He spoke with pride, "I heard... some guys from the eight noble clans... want to talk to me? I am a lazy man. I always am. I didn't come to greet you, but please, don't take it too serious..."

While he was talking, Long Tianyun kept watching his moves and his gestures.

The way he wiped the hands, drink the tea, remove the tea cover, talk... He kept listening while watching him carefully. Finally, Long Tianyun sighed in mind. [This Feng Monarch truly did not take us in his hearts!]

Ye Xiao finally spoke. The way he talked, it was not just to be neither humble nor pushy. It was being orgulous and overwhelming. The words he said, he didn't mean any of it. He just said it to be polite.

At such a moment, he acted like this. Apparently, he didn't think much about the five clans!

The others from the five clans all thought about it. Even though they didn't think as deep as Long Tianyun, they all could tell that Feng Zhiling was being toplofty. These men from the five clans had always been respected sincerely. They had never been treated like his before. If they didn't come for help, they would have gone long ago.

Ye Xiao had said something to break the cold air. What he had said was truly disrespectful. Nobody in the five clans knew how to answer. Things got back into cold air again.

Long Tianyun's face turned. He knew that no matter how cold it was, as far as he was concerned, Feng Zhiling would never start a

new topic again. The others who came with him all didn't feel like to talk anymore. He figured he had to be the one to talk.

"Feng Monarch, you actually came to see us, leaving the wealth and women behind you. We are grateful for it." Long Tianyun was nervous and anxious in the heart, but he appeared like he was just fine. He smiled and said, "Since we are here in Ling-Bao Hall today, we naturally want to see you in person. Now I see you, you are truly a dragon among people. You are a great figure. The vigor of Feng Monarch had moved others."

Chapter 385: Wrong!

Ye Xiao humbly smiled and said, "I am flattered."

And then he said, "Wan told me that you are here... for cooperation?"

He just said it directly.

He didn't even make some roundabout at all.

Even if Long Tianyun was smart, he was shocked all of a sudden. He didn't know how to answer it. Feng Monarch was too pushy that he really didn't know how to react.

"Cough..." Long Tianyun coughed and said, "Feng Monarch, this is the first time we meet each other. Let me introduce the men who come with me this time... Heh, heh. I am Long Tianyun, from Long Clan. This is... This is... That is... And this is..."

He was clever. He didn't know what to say, so he started to introduce others. While he was introducing them, he tried to keep himself calm and steady and was preparing what to say next.

Feng Monarch just casually sat there. As Long Tianyun introduced the others, his eyes followed the introduction from one person to another...

He didn't move his body. He didn't even move his neck.

He only rolled his eyeballs. No matter whom he looked to, he would slightly show some respect through eye contacts. Nobody felt despised.

Ten of them were all important figure of their clans. However, as they were facing Feng Monarch now, they all felt nervous.

Finally, everybody was introduced.

Long Tinayun had tidied up his thoughts. He spoke again, "The present situation, I reckon Feng Monarch must know well about it. Under such a negative situation, we, the eight noble clans cannot feel well about it. However, I believe it is also not a good situation for Ling-Bao Hall. I wonder what thoughts you may have, Feng Monarch?"

"Hmm. That's true. You are right." Feng Monarch nodded to agree.

Long Tianyun was glad that he agreed. So he continued, "Under such circumstances, you and us, if we stick together, we both win; if we don't, we both lose. Do you agree?"

Ye Xiao slowly nodded. "Rather practical. Good point."

Long Tianyun went on, "So, I believe, we should be allies. It should be a great thing for us, the eight noble clans, also for you,

Ling-Bao Hall."

When he finished the talk, the ten of them all turned silent. They looked at Feng Monarch quietly waiting for his reply.

Feng Zhiling was still calm and steady. He blandly spoke, "Oh. You believe?"

He emphasized the word 'you' when he said it. Long Tianyun didn't get annoyed. He nodded seriously and said, "Yes. I believe."

Ye Xiao stopped talking. He just slightly knocked the chair. He was lost in thoughts and he nodded slowly.

At this moment, the old man from Dongfang Clan was annoyed.

He wasn't annoyed by Feng Monarch, but by Long Tianyun.

[You believe?

What do you mean you believe?

Do you mean if we become allies to Feng Monarch, it should be all your credit?

So we are useless here?

How can you say that!]

So the elder from Dongfang Clan laughed embarrassedly and said, "That is right. We all believe that under such a dangerous situation, we all need Ling-Bao Hall's support, and in fact, Ling-Bao Hall needs us too. We are just fighting for our own interests. We work together, and it gets better. If we don't, we lose. That is obvious..."

Long Tianyun knew things had gone wrong now.

[Bastard. When we need you to say something, you don't even dare to fart. When we don't need you to, you show up from nowhere!]

The old man thought he was saying some decent words, but it might lead to many problems.

Problems that were very possible to be avoided!

Long Tianyun had learned a lot information behind the words 'You believe'.

As he expected, Feng Monarch stopped his thought and blandly smiled. "So we work together, we both win. If we don't we both lose?"

It sounded he was tired. There was indifference in his voice. He obviously didn't buy it.

He didn't put it straight, but only fools couldn't learn the true meaning in his words!

The elder from Dongfang Clan might have done some reckless talking, he was after all better than a fool. He realized Feng Zhiling was indifferent, so he felt pissed. He loudly spoke, "That is an obvious situation in front of us. I can't believe Feng Monarch doesn't know it."

That was starting to get more and more impolite!

Feng Monarch lowered his eyelids and blandly said, "I truly don't know it. Please tell me about it."

The elder from Dongfang Clan blandly spoke, "We, the eight noble clans, are in a very dangerous situation. We don't have to hide the truth. It is too obvious. We are facing the two great sects and that is all. The two great sects are powerful, but they are not perfect. We are in such a situation, but there are still hope for us. However, Ling-Bao Hall..."

Ye Xiao smiled yet didn't seem like smiling. "Oh? What about Ling-Bao Hall?"

"That is obvious. Ling-Bao Hall is under worse situation. It is much worse than us," the elder spoke slowly like he had seized the higher position in this negotiation. He lightly spoke, "Ling-Bao Hall has pissed off other countries. The kingdoms all have put rewards on your heads. Armies, assassins, and cultivators all come

here for you... Things are in a mess in the capital. Any insolvable problems could happen at any second..."

He spoke with confidence, "So, Ling-Bao Hall is facing enemies from everywhere. You are weak like an egg. Maybe you need to be an alliance to us more than we do to you."

Ye Xiao didn't raise his head. He just indifferently spoke, "Oh? I see. So that is your real thought!"

"That's right. As I know, Ling-Bao Hall's enemies are so strong, and they are about thirty thousand men. Facing such forces, Ling-Bao Hall is definitely unable to handle it. Thus, the one who desperately needs help is Ling-Bao Hall!"

"Wrong!" Ye Xiao finally looked up.

"Wrong?" The old man frowned. "How?"

...

Chapter 386: Enemies All Around the World

"First of all, you are wrong about the number of my enemies. Ling-Bao Hall is not just surrounded by enemies everywhere. We are facing the entire world! Kingdom of Lanfeng and Kingdom of Tianyun, enemies from south, north, and other directions. The rewards for our lives are no longer just three billion now. It is seven billion at the moment! There are almost thirty thousand assassin from just the two kingdoms."

"Kingdom of Tianyu and Kingdom of Lanfeng have their own assassins. They have rushed over to the Kingdom of Chen now. That is a number of five thousand."

Ye Xiao indifferently explained as he reached out five fingers and then put down two of them.

"The Wolf King doesn't think that he can defeat Ye Nantian, General Ye, in the battle, so he wants to defeat him in another way. His Sky Wolf Assassin Team have come over to the south. However, they have too strong smell on their bodies. No matter how cautious they are, they are too obvious. After crossing the north line, about three thousand of them died. This group is gone, but the assassin team from the south has successfully entered the kingdom now."

"Furthermore, there are about sixty thousand men who have arrived or on the way to the Kingdom of Chen because of the rewards. Among these people, there are at least 47 assassins who are in the top fifty assassins list!"

Ning Biluo and Liu Chanjun bitterly smiled when they heard it.

At least 47 of the top fifty assassins had arrived!

That was the truth, yet not entirely true.

Only Ning Biluo and Liu Changjun knew that all of the fifty assassins had arrived! They were all here to kill Feng Monarch, except Ning Biluo and Liu Changjun themselves!

Surely, it would be better for them to kill Wan Zhenghao too!

Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "There are more. The two kingdoms have yet to attack our business on their lands. They have made some restraint rules against us already. There are over ten thousand men from the big sects and clans in the Chen-Xing City."

"So, the enemies I am facing, are far more than thirty thousand. It should be a hundred thousand assassins!"

Ye Xiao coldly spoke, "The hundred thousand assassins almost represent eighty percent of the strongest cultivation power in the Land of Han-Yang!"

"Facing such a force, I mean, we are not just surrounded by enemies. The entire world is our enemy! For thousands of years, no other organization has had such an amount of enemies."

"So, we Ling-Bao Hall has truly made a record in the Land of Han-Yang this time." Ye Xiao was cold and proud. "An entire world of enemies! For real!"

"You seem proud of it, Feng Monarch?" The elder Dongfang frowned.

[Is he insane? Facing such a desperate situation, he should be crying, yet he is actually proud about it?

Isn't he shabby-genteel?]

"Why shouldn't I?" Ye Xiao laughed. "Make enemies to the entire world! Who else can do it? Look at it. If I can't feel proud, who? If such an accomplishment cannot make me proud, who else in the world can be proud?!"

Long Tianyun was truly speechless about it now.

He could feel from the conversation between Feng Monarch and the elder from Dongfang Clan that he had lost the small advantage that he thought he had in the negotiation with Feng Zhiling. Gradually, Feng Zhiling had seized the initiative now.

The elder thought that he was wise, yet he actually had lost their initiatives all of a sudden.

Long Tianyun had thought about interrupting them, but Ye Xiao kept sticking on the elder's talk. He didn't even look at Long

Tianyun. Long Tianyun couldn't find a chance to say something.

If he forcibly interrupt them, it might lead to a worse situation. He couldn't do anything, yet he knew it was not right to be silent!

Ye Xiao coldly and blandly spoke, "There are something that you can never imagine until you see it. It is even upon your imagination. However, when you face such things, you cannot cry. Crying cannot solve anything, don't you agree? Crying doesn't help at all! Only to face it bravely can solve the problem! Isn't it right?"

The elder from Dongfang Clan was speechless to Ye Xiao's question. He felt ashamed and stunned. He didn't know how to answer it.

"Even though we are isolated and helpless, we do our best," Ye Xiao said, "we fight against the whole world. It is depressing, but it is a miracle! It is a legend! If we face it ourselves, solve it and make it a miracle, we are making a legend. We will become a myth!"

"How is Ling-Bao Hall isolated and helpless?" Long Tianyun finally found a chance to interrupt. He hurriedly said, "At least your country will protect and support you."

Ye Xiao smiled. "Kingdom of Chen? Protect and support? Before the auction, the officials and noble-borns were indeed very close to us. Lots of people came and left. After the auction, when the crisis has just shown up, they were all gone. If I truly count on them, I will die before we know what happens!"

"Look at you. You are the five clans of the eight noble clans. You are the ones from outside Kingdom of Chen. The Mu Clan, Nangong Clan, and Gongsun Clan, which are inside Kingdom of Chen, never showed up. Isn't it something pointing to the problem."

"Didn't you just give the Kingdom of Chen seventy billion?" Long Tianyun couldn't believe it. "That is seventy billion! Such an amount of money must mean something to them!"

Ye Xiao coldly spoke, "We need to clarify something here. The seventy billion, we gave it to the soldiers. We give it to win the war, not to benefit the kingdom or the royal house of the kingdom."

"That is different. Completely different."

"In fact, Kingdom of Chen can stay away from this and doesn't twist the knife in us. That should be considered their support to us. Facing the depression from the entire world, even if they kick us out from this place, we can understand it. The kingdom hasn't done this. It means our king is after all honorable enough. He didn't kick down the ladder."

In Ye Xiao's eyes, there was a smile of ridicule.

...

Chapter 387: You Are Rabbits!

That smile was full of frustration. He was actually ridiculing himself rather than others.

He knew that what he said was the truth. That was the reality.

He didn't feel comfortable in his heart. After all, he had just given seventy billion not long ago, yet now he was isolated and helpless! Whoever went through such a thing would definitely feel frustrated too.

However, he understood it. No countries would put themselves in danger only for some civil organization.

Besides, Kingdom of Chen was in a dangerous situation facing enemies from four sides.

Even though the civil organization had just donated a huge amount of money to the country!

Politics means politics. There is always no place for favors! Besides, billion people's lives were indeed much more important than a Ling-Bao Hall.

As Zuo Wuji had said, Feng Zhiling who devoted everything for the kingdom was a complete idiot!

Ye Xiao knew it, or maybe he didn't.

However, he knew in his heart that there must be something he should protect.

[I don't want my country to suffer continuous wars. I don't want my home to be ruined! I don't want my close ones to be cold dead bodies.

I don't want that.

So I gave up the seventy billion!

I wanted it. That is my business. Help me or not, that is others business.

What I will end up with, it is my business.

That is all.

I don't need anybody to understand me. I did it, I feel good about it. That is all.]

"So, what this elder from Dongfang Clan said is simply wrong. It is completely wrong." Ye Xiao made it back to the topic. "What we are dealing with are much more than thirty thousand men. We are facing... every superior cultivator in the world!"

"We should like to ask, under such circumstances, even though you eight noble clans truly want to ally with us, and every clan of you will do your best, can we get through this crisis safely?"

Ye Xiao blandly asked, "You said, you can help me? It doesn't matter whether I believe it or not. Most importantly, do you believe what you said?"

The elder blushed.

As Ye Xiao stated, under such circumstances, even though the eight noble clans do their best to help, it was simply an utterly inadequate method in dealing with a severe situation.

What help could they do?

Even if they could insist saying that they could, they knew well that they couldn't!

"However, how about we turn it around. Although you cannot help Ling-Bao Hall, we have enough money to help you." Ye Xiao rolled his eyes and said, "Although we are enemy to the world, Ling-Bao Hall still has its authority. Although they all want to kill me, I know deep in their hearts, they want my supreme dan beads too..."

"The two great sects are indeed powerful, but... if we want to protect a clan, even eight clans... maybe we can."

"We can make it even better. If you want to leave, we can make sure you can return to your places safely!" Ye Xiao proudly spoke, "That is what we have. How is it? I believe what I just said. What about you?"

They were silent.

They were asked whether to believe it or not.

Surely they did. How could they not?

That was the truth!

Nobody could deny it!

"So, let's face the present situation. What you said are simply nonsense. You are just trying to raise your price."

Ye Xiao laughed. "Frankly speaking, now what you five clans offer are no more than just a rabbit before the new year's eve to me. I can celebrate the new year with the rabbit, also without a rabbit!"

Rabbit!

The men from the five clans were all breathing deeply.

[We are after all important figures in the world!

We are not the most powerful ones, but who dare to look down upon us?

Now we actually became rabbits to this Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall... A rabbit that he doesn't really need!]

Looking at these men breathing with anger that was shown on their faces, Ye Xiao smiled and said, "I was just making a comparison. You are surely not rabbits, and we are not going to celebrate a new year..."

They thought that he was going to apologize, so they felt better. However, they only heard him continue, "You are not rabbits. You are a little better than that!"

The ten of them felt furious.

[God damn it! Your explanation only makes it worse!

We are a little better than rabbits? Damn you! You are rabbits! You are all rabbits in your family!]

Ye Xiao looked at them coldly. He just smiled. In his eyes, there was only indifference.

[Do you dare to go mad at me?]

Long Tianyun coughed. He looked around his people with warning hints.

It was absolutely not a good time to go mad.

It would bring them a new enemy if they did!

Feng Monarch and Ling-Bao Hall were obviously not afraid of anything. They were already enemy to the entire world. Even if the eight noble clans became enemies to him, he wouldn't care. It made no difference at all.

However, to the eight noble clans, that was something they couldn't afford.

They had come to an end. If they became enemies to Ling-Bao Hall instead of being allies, they were simply cutting off their only chance...

They swallowed slobber with the anger in them.

They were so frustrated that they nearly puked out blood.

Luckily, they didn't go mad there.

Feng Monarch didn't let them go. He saw them calm down, so he continued, "Even though Ling-Bao Hall is in a desperate moment

without, it won't change anything with you. Nothing will change! So, it is not Ling-Bao Hall who needs help, instead... you urgently need our protection! It is, however, our decision to make."

That revealed the truth!

What Ye Xiao said was like a needle stabbing deep into their hearts. "Yet you actually said that we desperately need you? You even dreamed about taking the higher position in my place? And you actually put on airs talking to Wan Zhenghao? Isn't it hypocritical? Heh, heh..."

Long Tianyun helplessly sighed in his heart.

He had had some initiative on his side at the beginning, yet it was all ruined by the elder from Dongfang Clan during the conversation!

Now they didn't even have anything to say to ease the situation.

Let alone turning around the table...

The other nine from the five clans all blushed.

What Feng Zhiling said was all true.

They simply couldn't deny it.

Chapter 388: I Make The Call!

The only point that they could argue for was, 'more people means more power after all.'

However, everybody knew that even if there were ten thousand more people for Ling-Bao Hall, it wouldn't make much difference since the entire world was against them.

However, the ten people were all thrilled because of what Feng Zhiling just said.

"If you want to leave, we can make sure you can return to your places safely!" "That is what we have!"

That was some attractive proposal.

The five clans had worked so hard and now sought for alliance with Ling-Bao Hall shamelessly, for what?

What Feng Zhiling said was what for.

They needed it! They needed the chance to live!

Now, Feng Zhiling was acting like a stone in latrine, smelly and tough. However, even though he was in a desperate situation, he still had such vigor to say such words. That was much more powerful than they were already!

Nobody denied it.

In fact, after putting all things on the table, although Feng Monarch had humiliated them like sh*t, he showed them a path to life...

That was making his price in this negotiation.

Now it was time for them to think about how to answer it.

[You want alliance? You want protection?

Bear the insults and beg me!]

That was his attitude!

It made people angry, made people bleed in their heart, but they had to just bear it.

Now if they made it right and pleased Feng Monarch, they would become allies. That meant they had the chance to bring their supreme dan beads home safely. If not, as Feng Monarch said, they all died together!

They would have to just play their own roles.

They would have to let the gods decide their life and death.

They all knew it. They didn't dare to say anything now.

Even the elder from Dongfang Clan could only look at Long Tianyun with inquiry in his eyes.

Every word mattered now.

One mistake, they would lose. Nobody dared to take the responsibility.

Although none of them liked Long Tianyun, they had to admit, only Long Tianyun was possible to deal with the current situation!

Under the watch of the other nine, Long Tianyun nearly started to curse badly!

In fact, he was cursing already, in his heart! [Sh*t!]

[I was going to keep talking to Feng Monarch, trying to put myself low. That would give us a good chance to make this a deal. That old bastard ruined everything only because he didn't want me to take the credit. He actually just jumped out to snatch the credit.

Now he had ruined everything I built. We don't even have a word to say now, because he ruined everything. Well, eventually, they throw back to me all the problems. So am I born to be the one who

wipe your ass for you...

Fxck! Even if I am, this is something that doesn't seem like solvable now!

What do you want me to do!]

Long Tianyun was lost in thoughts for while. He looked at Ye Xiao with cautiousness in eyes.

Ye Xiao was looking at him too.

Looking at Ye Xiao's gentle but tough eyes, Long Tianyun was stunned.

[That is a man with extreme pride.]

In Ye Xiao's eyes, there was some aura of a sovereign descending the world, which made Long Tianyun feel the true personality of him.

After a few thoughts, Long Tianyun coughed and sat straight up. He spoke with an extreme solemn attitude, "Since Feng Monarch has pushed the conversation to such a situation, what we can do is simply nothing but blush. I apologize sincerely for what we did impolitely earlier."

He slightly bowed.

That meant a great deal to him. Long Tianyun was the man in charge of the Long Clan. He didn't even bow to a king. He was representing the five clans to talk to Ye Xiao. The bow was truly full of sincerity!

Ye Xiao was surprised too.

He didn't expect Long Tianyun to seize the chance so well so quickly.

Since he had bowed to him and apologized, Ye Xiao couldn't push it too hard to slap on their faces anymore.

So he nodded.

"Now that the conversation has come to the current point, let's just be frank to each other. Let's make everything clear on the table." Long Tianyun humbly spoke, "What we hope now, is... to bring the supreme dan beads home safely. Nothing else is more important."

"Although supreme dan beads are simply something you can make yourself at any time, for us, it is an opportunity that never appeared in thousands of years. It is our hope. We have to sacrifice everything to seize it."

"For this opportunity, we can accept any sacrifices in any ways!"

"Now, we would like to ask, what do you want in return, to help us with it, Feng Monarch?"

Long Tianyun said, "Anything you ask, we will die for it!"

That was some strong speech.

At the same time, he was giving up all initiative to Ye Xiao.

Deep inside, Long Tianyun was helpless.

As Feng Monarch had already shown them that he was not afraid of anything now, the only thing Long Tianyun could do was to be honest and frank. [I will show you whatever it is in my mind, and you can just pick whatever you want from me.

The only thing we want is to bring the supreme dan beads home safely.

Nothing else matters!]

In another word, everything else can be the price for them!

Ye Xiao was surprised. He looked at Long Tianyun and blandly said, "Master Long is making a good move now. To retreat in order to advance. Extraordinary."

Long Tianyun sincerely said, "This is the only thing we can do now."

"To be honest, this is not to retreat in order to advance trick. This is simply me showing my attitude." Long Tianyun took in a deep breath. "As long as the supreme dan beads will be safely delivered, even though you want us all to be slaves to you, or die for you, we will do it without regret."

"We believe what Feng Monarch said."

Long Tianyun spoke strongly, "At least at this moment, I can represent every single one in my clan that we will do it!"

"So will our clan!"

The elder from Dongfang Clan hurriedly made his statement.

"We too. For our clans, for the future that the supreme dan beads can bring to us, we will be glad to give our lives to your."

The other clans all agreed with Long Tianyun.

...

Chapter 389: More Men To Use

Honestly, they didn't feel comfortable hearing what Long Tianyun said. [You just gave up your initiative and everything we have to him? You just let him decide our future? What the hell is that!]

However, when they thought deeper, they found that it was such an incredible scheme!

That was truly incredible!

That was simply to put themselves into death to seek for a chance to live!

Besides, if they really were going to die, as long as Feng Zhiling would keep his words, it was worth their sacrifice.

If not so, what other way could they seek their chance to live under such fatal danger!

In fact, to deal with Feng Monarch, the best way was exactly to be honest and frank.

He was a man that did not like to bear any indecency!

He had an extreme personality. He would turn hostile at any second if he was offended.

Ye Xiao sighed in his heart. He had some complicated feelings.

When he saw these ten guys for the first sight, he could tell their personalities. They all had their own distinctions.

Some of them were mature and experienced, some of them were wise and smart, some of them were cunning and foxy, and some of them were cowardly and craven...

But at this moment, they were all sincere for their own clans!

[No wonder the eight noble clans could last for thousands of years. They never fell in the disasters in the history... There are reasons for that.] Ye Xiao sighed in his mind. [They could be brutal to others, they may shirk responsibilities, they may fight for credits they don't deserve, they may be cowardly, and they may be extremely cunning that they could do anything to reach their purpose, however, they are all so loyal to their own clans!]

[For their clans, they could endure everything. They could sacrifice everything they have! That is why their clans would rise!]

Ye Xiao was quiet.

Long Tianyun hurriedly spoke, "Feng Monarch, do you have any thoughts in mind yet?"

Ye Xiao was thinking. He then slowly spoke, "What I want is honesty. What I want is strict law. What I want is your absolute compliance."

He emphasized it, "Listen. It is absolute compliance!"

He looked around to them one by one.

"Because the current situation requires us to be bond together tight, that is the only way to buy us a tiny chance to survive."

Long Tianyun heavily nodded. "Please, Feng Monarch. Don't worry about it. If any of us dare to have crooked thoughts, I will get him down myself!"

Ye Xiao nodded. "Since you said so, I won't refuse it. However, I have to put it frankly. If any of you dares to say one way and think another, I will not take the responsibility for the safety of your supreme dan beads, and I will use you as expendable men!"

The guys were speechless again. [You are the boss now. Isn't it all yours to judge whether who is saying one way while thinking another?

Even if we all die, you can say that some of us have made some mistakes... You can always get away with it.]

While they were thinking, Long Tianyun decisively spoke, "No problem!"

"Good! I can guarantee you all one thing, as long as you keep your promise, we will keep ours!" Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "Even if the supreme dan beads in your hands are all gone, I can make it up to you!"

"You know that. Supreme dan beads are not that special for me anyway."

"The only thing I need is that you do as I say. As long as you do, life or death, I will never break my word! If you do not, don't be surprised how brutal I can be to you!"

Long Tianyun finally took a breath out with relief. He said, "Thank you so much, Feng Monarch."

The other nine people all felt relieved.

They suddenly felt safe when Ye Xiao made his promise.

As Feng Monarch said, supreme dan beads were much more important than their lives for them, however, it was small thing for him that he wouldn't even talk about it much...

However, these men were in danger now.

Because... no matter what would happen next, they would have to be the ones in front. They had to be in the place where there was

danger.

Otherwise...

They would become cowardly liars and they would die.

Furthermore, their supreme dan beads would be lost...

What they must do in the future was to be Feng Zhiling's slaves. They all sighed in their hearts. They had prepared for it now.

...

The cooperation was agreed, after all, under Ye Xiao suppression.

Ye Xiao asked Wan Zhenghao to take care of the guests while he left Ling-Bao Hall secretly with an excuse that he needed meditation.

...

He was heading to the bamboo forest!

After all, he now had more men to use.

Ye Xiao felt that the mischief he made had finally brought him something good. Although those men would not change anything

in the main battle, he had more force to use after all.

A locust was no meat but better than vegetable after all!

"It seems I should better make such thing more often I guess. It won't be too much to make it eight times a day!"

After disguising himself, he walked to the street. He could feel that the spiritual minds in the air had changed a lot.

It was full of inquiries a day before, but now it was full of hostility.

That was killing intent!

Everything had its reasons. What happened the last night were not only those things between the three groups of people that Ye Xiao and his men tried to mess with. In fact, Infinitude Sect's residence had been through a bloodshed!

Over forty men from the Infinitude Sect all died in the bloodshed. No one survived.

The six supreme dan beads they had gotten were gone.

Some of the small forces in the martial world who had gotten just one supreme dan bead by luck were all wiped out. The supreme dan beads seemed more like death beads than supreme dan beads

for them.

The Chen-Xing City was like a monster from the ancient time that would keep silent in the days and roared in the nights. Every man from outside this city in the martial world was swallowed one by one...

Ye Xiao got the news and felt that he had seized the rule of all this. It was just some blurry thought in his mind though. However, he clearly felt that as long as he could sort it all out, he could thoroughly solve the problem this time.

However, no matter how deep he kept himself in thoughts, it was still just some ambiguous concepts in his mind. He was like looking at flowers in the mist. He couldn't see through it.

He knew that it wasn't something he could finish in a short time, so he just hang it there.

There was something much more important for him to do right now!

Now, he had to do something, to face a man.

This man was the last person he would like to face in the world, but he had to!

...

Chapter 390: Illusory Sky Array

It was still that mountain.

It was the same bamboo forest.

Ye Xiao stopped by the edge of that area.

When he stepped one step ahead, it might be the entrance to hell for him. That was a boundary between life and death!

Ye Xiao changed his look into Feng Zhiling again.

He quietly looked at the bamboo forest.

With no reason, he felt depressed every time when he looked at this place.

It was some kind of suppression!

The suppression came from that man in the forest.

Master Bai!

The mountain and the forest hadn't change its look for thousands of years as it was said. It was quite a story. There must be secrets about this.

However, no matter how magical it was, it wouldn't give Ye Xiao such suppression!

Only Master Bai could!

Only he could do it!

Ye Xiao could be sure that if there wasn't Master Bai but only Wan of Clouds and Xiu of Heavens, he wouldn't be so terrified.

He knew he had many methods to stop the women from doing anything. At least, it would be difficult for them to do anything.

However, now that there was Master Bai with them. Even though he was physically weak, his wisdom made every opponent of his feel powerless.

[I will defeat you someday!]

Ye Xiao spoke in mind while he was walking to the bamboo forest!

[Face to face!]

...

In the bamboo forest.

Ye Xiao, appeared as Feng Zhiling, was moving rapidly.

However, he was immersed into a strange illusion loop.

Spring, summer, autumn, and winter.

When he made one step, he saw the green bamboo. When he made another, what he saw was all snow and he felt cold. After a while, it became spring, and the bamboo leaves were shaking. When he move further, it suddenly became a cool autumn day...

It was endless.

In the bamboo forest, Ye Xiao had moved many rounds and saw the four seasons many times.

It was still indistinct. Nothing changed. It felt like there was no other people within thousands of miles around!

But he was in the Chen-Xing City!

He had been in this place before!

He would never forget what he had seen the last time he came!

[This must be an array!]

He was enlightened and came to a conclusion.

It was not some ordinary array. Ordinary arrays were all just making illusions to cover people's eyes. They interrupt the sensations of human bodies to create fake perceptions. That would make people fall into misunderstanding in thought. The array he was in now allowed him to exactly feel the change of the temperature of the four seasons. He had all those small feelings of it. Ye Xiao knew that it was far beyond normal arrays. It was very likely the one that was most difficult to learn, Illusory Magic Array!

Illusory Magic Array was something in the myths. Ye Xiao had only heard about it before; he had never seen or experienced any.

He had never expected to experience this legendary array in this lowest realm under the firmament!

He didn't know if it was lucky or it was misfortune!

Ye Xiao stopped. He stood there quietly and started thinking carefully.

No matter what array it was, low-level, high-level, normal or legendary, it had a leak point.

At least, the one who set up this array would always have a way

to get out of it. He wouldn't be trapped by himself!

Then, the path he took to leave the array was the one that led to the exit. That was the key to breaking the array.

...

While Ye Xiao was thinking about how to break the array, there was a man looking at him with his eyes of wisdom and he didn't know it!

In fact, when he just entered the bamboo forest, Master Bai sensed it.

He was watching Ye Xiao with a very special way. It was beyond normal people's acknowledgement!

He looked up ahead in the distance, and then suddenly, he turned over his hand and showed his palm. He then looked at his palm.

On his palm, when he looked at it, the palm prints disappeared. After some glow and shadows rolling upon it, there showed up a mirror in his hand.

It wasn't a real mirror though. It was a mirror plane. Inside the plane, everything was so clearly shown!

Inside the mirror plane, it was the entire mountain and the

bamboo forest.

The four seasons were in it too.

As expected, there was also... Feng Monarch in it.

"Master, I will bring him to you!" a man in black clothes bowed and said with a solemn face, "this place is a sacred place where nobody dares to get in for thousands of years. He actually just broke in. How dare him. I think it is time that we show the world our rule here."

Master Bai shook his head. "No need. Let's see whether he has a way to deal with it or not. Rules are there to be break. It is just that nobody is able to break it. That makes it infrangible. If he can break my array, that must be something delightful. This man, the Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall. I quite look forward to his performance!"

The man in black was solemn. He said, "Yes, master."

Master Bai looked at the mirror with a smile as he murmured, "I wonder if you can break my Illusory Sky Array? If you can, that would be rather interesting!"

He thought about it and then shook his head. He laughed.

The Illusory Sky Array was marvelous indeed. Even in the Qing-Yun Realm, maybe no one was able to break it, let alone in this

lowest realm, Land of Han-Yang. Even in the realm where Master Bai was from, there were just a few people who could get through it. That wasn't something easy to achieve!

[Feng Zhiling is the Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall, a master of supreme level dan-making...

Could he be also an array-breaking master?!

Thinking of it, he felt that it was too much for Feng Zhiling to do. He was about to send somebody to get Feng Zhiling, but he suddenly stopped.

He saw that Feng Monarch stopped moving and closed his eyes. Feng Zhiling took a piece of black cloth and covered his own eyes.

"Well, that is smart." Master Bai smiled blandly and said with interest, "Are you trying to do it gruffly? It would very possibly work in some normal arrays to break the array down by force, however, in my Illusory Sky Array... It won't. At least, you are not powerful enough. If you cannot break it by one strike, the array will recover itself. It will be just wasting your time and effort! Well, let me see what you got though. Maybe you will surprise me!"

...

Chapter 391: Break the Array?

Ye Xiao covered his eyes and walked straight ahead in the bamboo forest. When there was bamboo blocking his way, he would just sway the sword around him. - Shoot... - Endless bamboo were cut down.

He then kept going forward. Step by step, he kept moving straight.

There was praise in Master Bai's eyes.

[It seems this guy really stays unaffected by the array. The four seasons in the array are so real. He can feel it, but he just treat it as nothing.]

[However... You can't just ignore it. It exists after all. In your feelings, it exists..." Master Bai smiled blandly. "However, if people of the Heaven's Hall are going through this, they have to reach the Clear Mind Stage to do as he can. It seems this Feng Monarch is truly an outstanding figure. It surprised me really..."

Ye Xiao had walked out no less than a thousand steps. There were million bamboos that were cut down by him.

He felt that he was almost there. A thousand steps was over the diameter of the bamboo forest after all. No matter where he was, he should be outside the array now. He should be at least out on the mountain now.

When he took off the cloth on his eyes, he was speechless.

In front of him, there were still a lot of bamboos.

There was no end of it.

Behind him, there was no bamboo that was cut down at all.

Ye Xiao remembered clearly that he had cut down millions of it. How come it suddenly disappeared?

[How could it be? Was it illusion again? But I could feel that I cut down something!]

He couldn't believe it, so he swayed his sword again. - Shoot, shoot, shoot... -

A lot of bamboo branches fell to the floor, and an empty place showed up around him.

However, the bamboo on the floor suddenly disappeared.

Meanwhile, the empty place became full of bamboo again...

Ye Xiao widely opened his eyes. [What? How can it?]

Then he was enlightened. [Why can't it? The array can make me feel the four seasons. That is so real. The feeling of me cutting down the bamboo can also be illusory, and it is nothing but an illusion that I thought I was moving forward!]

What I have done, every move of me, are all in the man's eyes, the man who made this array. Whatever I did, it was just like a monkey play!]

Ye Xiao figured it out. He swayed the sword with anger and suddenly stopped. Anger never helped. He had to calm down and think it through. That was the only way to get him out.

He calmed down again. He was here to seek cooperation with Master Bai. They had a deal after all. If he shouted Master Bai's name, Master Bai would very possibly let him in.

However, Ye Xiao didn't want to admit defeat.

[You play a tough role to stop me. You think I cannot get through it? You think I have to ask for your help? To send somebody to get me in? Wouldn't it be too pathetic of me? Wouldn't I be too weak? And... shameless?!

Besides, I am not totally ignorant about arrays, alright? It didn't work. Fine. I will change another way then!]

Master Bai looked at Feng Monarch with smile on his face. He couldn't help but praised him. [He is a proud man. He is

somehow... like me?

Whatever he wants, he do it himself!

He won't count on others!

He knows that if he asks me, I will send somebody to lead him in. However, he just doesn't want to do it. He wants to do it on his own to break through the Illusory Sky Array.]

"However, you have to be powerful enough to keep your pride. If you are not strong enough, no matter how proud you want to be, you are just a fool being stubborn who was stuck there." Master Bai smiled and blandly said, "Since I don't have anything urgent. Let's just leave him be. Just let him do it. When he begs, we let him in."

The man in black nodded. "Yes."

And then he disappeared.

Master Bai said that he would just let him be, yet he was still watching the mirror plane in his hand. He looked at Feng Zhiling standing right where he was. He smiled.

"I like those who are determined to challenge me..." He seemed looking at a toy. "Please don't beg me to let you in. If you do, I will be disappointed to myself..."

He just sat there, kept watching, like it was a delightful thing for him to watch Feng Monarch embarrassed.

However, his expression changed after a while. He stopped smiling. He stopped being bland. He widely opened his eyes and said, "Oh?"

And then he rubbed his lower jaw and murmured, "This man... That is a very interesting thing to do..."

Feng Monarch suddenly opened his eyes, like he had finally thought of something.

He just stepped one foot aside to the left. There was a bamboo there, but when he stepped over, the bamboo disappeared right before he touched it.

What he did next was an even bolder comprehension. He didn't move the other leg. He just stepped back the left foot.

The bamboo showed up again like it had never disappeared.

"I see," Feng Monarch murmured, "what in sight looks real is fake. In other words, what seems fake is actually real? Real or fake, true or false, they are all interlaced. I see. That is it... No big deal..."

He then stepped ahead, but this time, he didn't step back. He kept moving ahead...

Master Bai stared at the moving figure in the bamboo forest with emotions in his eyes. He couldn't stop smiling.

"Good. Bravo. He actually sees through some of the Illusory Sky Array by watching the details. Well done..."

"Now you finally look like... a man who tries to stop the House of the Chaotic Storms!" Master Bai murmured, "He has learned about the truth in a certain extent. However, he is still far from the core of the array. But he is moving in a right path now... How does he do that?"

For the wise Master Bai, it was still a question he didn't know the answer to.

...

Chapter 392: Your Choice

Ye Xiao was moving faster and faster in the bamboo forest. The Illusory Sky Array, which could stop millions of heavenly soldiers in the Ninefold Heaven's Hall, was no more mysterious in his eyes at all.

He moved as he wished, broke anything as he wanted. He was confident and he moved like the wind!

A while earlier, he just had been stuck and helpless.

Master Bai didn't know how he did it. In fact, Ye Xiao himself didn't know it either. He partly knew, but not really. He did it, but had no idea how he managed to do it!

What led him to this wasn't the 'fake and real' stuffs he murmured. He didn't truly see through the Illusory Sky Array. It was because...

Ye Xiao was enlightened indeed, so he eventually knew something about this array, but he couldn't find the way. When he was troubled what to do next, he operated the Yin Yang Eyes. It helped a lot.

Yin in the left eye, while Yang in the right eye.

He operated it to just test it. He didn't expect success. However, unexpectedly, it truly surprised him this time!

In the sight of his Yin Eye, some paths in the fake bamboo forest had clearly showed up.

Those were pathways in the forest.

In the Yang Eyes, it was just the same like before. Nothing special.

He thought about it for a second and then stopped the Yang Eye. He then moved along the pathway in the sight of Yin Eye. That helped him on his way.

He had been moving in a clear path earlier, but that was affected by the array. No matter how he moved, he felt uncomfortable. This time, when he stepped on the pathway, the array couldn't stop him anymore. He then had a fantastic feeling of breaking chains.

When he had just moved out hundreds of steps, things changed in his sight. It was still a bamboo forest in front of him, however, the bamboo forest was totally different from the one behind him. It was all grey.

Gloomy bamboo.

Ye Xiao stopped and didn't dare to be reckless. He looked at it with Yin Eye again. It was still full of grey. He found nothing, but he didn't give up. As he felt pain and sore in the right eye, Yang

Eye was opened again. In front of him, there was a bright pathway.

The Yang Eye worked!

Ye Xiao felt like he had won the lottery.

He never knew that Yin Yang Eyes could actually help him this much. He wonder if he could see through all the arrays in the world!

However, it wasn't a good time to celebrate it. He calmed down and walked ahead step by step.

After another hundreds of steps, he felt brightness again.

It was the second time an endless bamboo forest disappeared behind him.

A courtyard showed up in front of him. There were a couple of bothies in there. It looked good among the bamboos.

Around the courtyard, there were bamboos swaying in the wind.

The dozens of bamboos near the courtyard seemed different with what Ye Xiao had just seen.

He had just glanced at them.

He then focus on something in front of him.

There was a man.

The man was wearing Snow White robe with broad sleeves. His hair was dark like ink. He had a pretty face, and he looked casual and elegant. In his eyes, there seemed to be sky, ocean, stars, sun, moon, the entire universe.

He was sitting on a wheelchair. That was the only thing that made him imperfect.

Maybe there was no perception in the world. There never was!

The man's eyes were profound. He looked at Ye Xiao with a smile. He was like a part of the sky and earth. Ye Xiao looked at him and felt like he was enlightened.

‘I move when the cloud moves. I exist when the sky exists.’

Master Bai.

Nobody had such vigor, except Master Bai of the House of the Chaotic Storms.

Maybe Zuo Wuji could be, but he didn't have the broad mind like Master Bai. Zuo Wuji's mind was limited in only one time, one

country and one land!

"Feng Monarch is indeed outstanding. You didn't let me down." Master Bai smiled and looked at Ye Xiao. "In nine thousand years, you are the only one who can get into this courtyard to see me by yourself. You are the only one."

"Unique." Master Bai showed his praise to him in his voice.

Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "Small tricks. That's all. I am flattered."

Master Bai laughed and said, "You are a proud man! Good."

Ye Xiao laughed.

Offense and defense, that happened and then finished with simply a couple of words.

There was offense, and there was defense. However, there was no winner. And it ended!

Around them, there were some fierce aura of killing gathering secretly. It felt like it would explode at any second.

Master Bai spoke blandly, "Feng Monarch is an important guest. Don't be rude. Teas please."

As he said so, the suppressions from around them disappeared all of a sudden. That was stunning. However, neither Master Bai or Ye Xiao cared about that suppression.

Master Bai was the owner of this place. He didn't care about those forces. That was reasonable. However, Feng Zhiling didn't care about it at all. That was interesting.

They might think that Feng Zhiling couldn't sense the suppression, so he didn't care because he was ignorant.

Maybe Feng Zhiling was powerful enough, so he didn't fear that force!

Was he really that powerful?

Absolutely not!

Ye Xiao might have been improved a lot recently, but he was in the initial levels of Sky Origin Stage. He didn't even reach the middle levels. Any one of the men in black on Master Bai's side could beat him up badly. Ye Xiao was truly weak in physical strength.

It was a sharp point of view, but it was the truth!

It wasn't right to say that he wasn't powerful enough though. Power wasn't limited as physical strength. His ability to make supreme dan beads was a part of his power. Feng Zhiling was well

known as the master of dan-making. He was the one who could make the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan, which Master Bai needed to help himself stand up again. Ye Xiao was sure Master Bai wouldn't harm him before he made him the dan bead. That was why he wouldn't care about any force around Master Bai!

The next moment, Master Bai looked at Ye Xiao and casually spoke, "As the first mortal person who came here, the House of the Chaotic Storms, Feng Monarch, you can choose any tea you want to drink."

Chapter 393: Heavenly Destined Tree!

Ye Xiao said, "Oh? I wonder how many kinds of tea can I choose in your place? Do I get to choose any one I like?"

Master Bai blandly smiled. "South to north, sky to earth, inside the universe, no matter what tea you want, we have it."

He looked at Ye Xiao with a smile. "It is only your decision we don't have."

Ye Xiao casually spoke, "Then I shall not refuse such great kindness. You said you have all kinds of tea. I would love to believe it. You are confident, but I still have doubts about it. Let me choose something beyond greatness in the world then. Well, there is more. I hope that after I drink that tea, there will be no other people who can have the luck to drink it after me."

"In other words, I want to be the only one. The unique one."

Ye Xiao looked at Master Bai and seriously spoke, "Before me, no one has ever tasted it. After me, no one will drink it. It is also, the best tea in your place. I wonder if my request is too much for you. Am I troubling you?"

Master Bai still smiled. He looked at Ye Xiao. "Not at all. I never knew that you are such a man with good taste. It surprised me..."

Ye Xiao blandly nodded. "You too."

[Since I got in, you have been testing me. You throw a question to me even when you want to get me some tea. Test?

Humph...]

Ye Xiao was impatient inside his heart. He looked at Master Bai and thought, [He is just a cripple... He just has a pretty face. However... Humph. If I appear as Ye Xiao, I should be much prettier than him. You arrogant bastard...

You asked me to choose a tea. That is fine really. But you said you have all kinds of tea in your place?!

Ok then. This is what I want!

Are you really able to give me this tea?

If you are not, you take your arrogant bullsh*t words back to your mouth!]

Master Bai looked at him for a while and then smiled blandly. He took out a small bag of tea from the space ring on his finger.

"Since I have said so, I have to do it. No matter how hard it is, I will have to try. Only the result matters anyway." Master Bai smiled lightly. "Today, I learned about something. It is better not to say too much boast. In fact, it is better not to say any."

"Because you never know what your words would bring you. It may truly embarrassed yourself. Like now."

Master Bai was still smiling. He looked at Ye Xiao with a weird expression in his eyes. He shook the small bag of tea in his hand and said, "Feng Monarch, make a guess. Do I have the tea you want exactly?"

[What the f... frog! Test again?!]

Ye Xiao nearly cursed out.

[Do you really have to make it so tough? You are just a man with a young face!

Do you think you are Zuo Wuji?!

Pah! Zuo Wuji is a real young man. Master Bai was a monster who has lived for god knows how many years!]

"A great figure as you, you must have something beyond the greatness. Let me guess. You surely have it. Show me what you got." Ye Xiao was smiling. He flattered.

"Hmm. I can, but... it truly costs a lot." Master Bai looked at the small bag of tea in his hand and bitterly smiled, "That is why I learned not to make boast like I just did. Look at me. I encountered

a serious and stubborn guy, you!"

Ye Xiao raised the eyebrows and said, "Oh? You begrudge it? If you truly do, you can just take back your words! As long as you say that you have just drunk the last bit of the tea I want before I arrived, I can accept the truth!"

Master Bai smiled. "If I am not Bai Chen, I may do as you said. However, as I make the boast, and you did request, I am Bai Chen, I shall not regret. As you wish."

He looked at Ye Xiao with smile.

Ye Xiao knew what he meant. He just said without feeling ashamed, "Well then, I shall wait. I can't wait to get to know how it feels to be unique. Is it like in sweet dreams, or is it something spreading far away?"

He wouldn't feel scruples at all. They had begun the topic already, so he decided to make it more dramatic!

Master Bai was surprised. He then burst into laughter, "Interesting. Really interesting."

In normal situation, when the host asked the guest, 'What tea do you want?'

Most guests would said, 'No worries. Anything you have would be fine.'

Surely, some of them might be quite close to the host, so they might said, 'I heard that you have this tea that taste real good. Please let me have some!'

However, Master Bai had never met someone like Ye Xiao. [I let you choose, because I am being polite to you. You actually are shameless to an unbelievable level. You are troubling me.

And you just don't want to stop!]

A guest like Feng Zhiling, he must be the only one in the history. On that, he was indeed unique.

"Feng Monarch, have you ever heard about Heavenly Destined Tree?" Master Bai spoke lightly. He took out a tea pot, tea cups and water from his space ring.

"Heavenly Destined Tree?" Ye Xiao said, "I guess I am ignorant. I haven't heard of it before."

Master Bai opened the small tea bag and blandly said, "It is reasonable that you haven't heard of it. It is never something that exists in the mortal world. It is something from the Hongmeng Heavens."

"Beyond the thirty-third layer of heaven, there is a tree. Since the sky and the earth were separated, this tree existed. This is Heavenly Destined Tree. There is only one in the entire universe."

"Heavenly Destined Tree will fructify every one era. It can be food or medicine. If a mortal man eats the fruit of this tree, he has immortality and the ability to fly. If an immortal man eats it, he will be improved thousands of years cultivation! If it is made into medicine, along with eighteen other precious treasures, it can be made into the legendary sacred dan, the Innate Nature. Whoever swallows it will have cultivation ability of one era, anyone!"

"One era means one hundred twenty-nine thousand and six hundred years!" Master Bai raised his eyebrows and smiled to Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao coughed and said, "Well, the universe is truly so broad. There is actually such a magical tree in the world. What a wonder."

Others might thought that Master Bai was bluffing, that he was just trying to raise the price of himself and showed others how well informed he was, however, Ye Xiao knew that Master Bai didn't lie at all.

Chapter 394: The Unique!

Although Ye Xiao hadn't heard about Heavenly Destined Tree and he couldn't prove Master Bai's words right or wrong, he knew that Master Bai didn't need to lie about this, as he was proud and elegant.

He disdained to lie.

However, a tree that fructify nearly every one hundred and thirty thousand years, that was too much of a shocking news.

"The fruit flesh of the tree is marvelous already. It truly has the ability to even change the nature's work. However, the flesh was just normal compared to the other parts of it. Inside the fruit, there is a kernel. Inside the kernel, there will be hidden a dan book!"

Master Bai spoke in a low voice, "The dan book records the core of the supreme martial principle of reaching the Saint Stage. Only one volume in one era."

Ye Xiao was shocked.

[Heavenly Destined Tree!

Supreme martial principle of the Saint Stage!]

"However, it is nearly impossible to see the fruit, let alone to get the fruit. Whoever is able to see the tree must be someone chosen by heavens." Master Bai continued in a low voice, "A man chosen by the heavens."

"Many people know about this tree, however, almost all of them haven't seen the tree in their lives."

"They were not destined to. They couldn't see it, because they were not chosen!"

"The tree has dropped down god knows how many fruits in the history... Nobody know where the fruits go. However, whoever got the fruit became cultivators in Saint Stage! No exception!"

"I don't know who among all Saint Stage cultivators have eaten the Heavenly Destined Fruit or cultivate the dan book martial art inside the fruit, but some of them must have. That is a sure thing."

Master Bai lightly spoke, "There was a year, I was still young. I was hanging around outside when I saw a tree. On the tree I saw a fruit. That fruit wasn't ripe yet."

Master Bai lightly said, "Maybe I hadn't been chosen yet. I didn't know it was the Heavenly Destined Tree though. I love drinking tea since I was little. I saw the leaves on the tree were all so green and beautiful, so I took hundreds of the tender ones and made them into tea."

"When I was making the tea, I read an ancient book by coincidence. It was exactly about the Heavenly Destined Tree. The leaves fit the description so well. I realized that the tree I met was the Heavenly Destined Tree."

"I ran back to that place, but the tree was gone. I haven't seen it ever since."

He sighed. "I know that when it came, I got it. When it left, I lost it. I have missed the biggest opportunity in my life! It is too late to regret now! That is why I haven't tasted any of that tea ever since. I kept it till now!"

"This is it." Master Bai turned around slowly. "What you requested, I guess this must be the only tea that I can keep my promise with. There are ninety-nine leaves inside this bag. When I made the tea, I was reading that book. My hand shook, so I ruined some of those leaves... And then, these are the ones left."

"This must be the destiny. The heaven's will."

"I believe, in the history, whoever met the Heavenly Destined Tree and also knew it, they wouldn't be willing to make the leaves into tea. So, me, Bai Chen, is the only one in the history... who have done such a thing..."

When he said so, rarely seen, he was self-mocking.

He had been casual like he didn't care about anything in the

world. No matter what happened, he faced it peacefully. He looked down upon the world with laughters, however, when he talked about those tea leaves, he looked emotional. There was regret and pain in him. Even though he was trying so hard to suppress the feelings, he couldn't.

That was after all a god-given opportunity!

It was very likely the only one he got in his entire life!

It had come to him, and he could reach it so easily, yet he missed it!

There was only one word that could describe it well, 'tragedy'.

"So, before today, nobody has ever tasted it." Master Bai bitterly smiled. "After today, there will be no one to taste it either."

"There are only these ninety-nine leaves in the history."

"After you drink it, I will not taste it too." Master Bai bitterly smiled. "I really don't want to. I need to keep one leave in case next time if I meet the tree, I won't miss it again. I know it is nearly impossible to see it again, but I am still expecting it..."

Ye Xiao was thrilled up. He said, "Since you don't want to drink it, why don't you just give me the rest."

Master Bai bitterly smiled again. He looked at Ye Xiao, stunned, and then he shook his head. "Feng Monarch, I have never seen, or thought that, there is actually such a shameless man like you in the world. Do you even know what you are talking about? ..."

Ye Xiao talked like it was a matter of course, "Where does this tea come from, what it is made from, these are not relevant to the truth that you should make me some tea! Truth is truth. Since only I can drink it now, you won't drink it yourself, and you cannot anymore. Why can't you just keep one leaf to yourself? It will only make you feel worse when you see those leaves, right? You don't need all those leaves. It will only keep telling you that you are a fool, right? Every time when you look at it, you feel like a fool, right? Why don't you just give them to me? Do you really want to make yourself stuck with it? Think about it!"

"If you give the leaves to me, you will be free from it! Won't you?"

Ye Xiao smilingly spoke, "I am just helping you out here. I am taking off the chains on your feet. I don't need you to say thank you though. It means nothing. I really like those leaves. The tea that only I can drink..."

Master Bai laughed and shook his head. "I got to truly know the well known Feng Monarch today. You actually talk like you are doing me a favor while you are trying to take advantage of me. You actually told me not to say thank you. You are such a weirdo in the world. You truly opened my eyes."

...

Chapter 395: Heavenly Destined Tea

Ye Xiao half closed his eyes and said, "Heh, heh. The same to you. Don't you want this result yourself? Otherwise, you wouldn't show me this tea. Since you showed it to me, you are not planning to keep it..."

From his half-closed eyes, a stream of greedy light appeared. He slowly talked, "The tea, is actually a sore point in you, right?"

Master Bai was shocked. He didn't answer.

Ye Xiao's words touched the weak point in the heart.

When he decided to take out the tea, he didn't think about it. When he was introducing the tea, he did.

He didn't expect Ye Xiao could notice though.

And Ye Xiao actually said it.

[I am a bit wrong about this guy. He is not just shameless.

He is extremely thoughtful. When I was talking about the tea, there was just one instant that I got emotional. Yet he sensitively noticed my true feeling.

Why did I take this tea out?

In fact, I don't know!

Maybe deep inside me, I desperately want to get rid of this sore point?

I desperately want to remove the frustrated part of my heart?

Like he said, maybe the experience about the tree is the sore point in me!]

Master Bai's face was dark. He kept dealing with the tea in his hand. However, his thoughts were far away from the pot and cups already.

After a while, he smiled and slowly said, "Thank you! Although you said that you don't need me to say this, I will have to say it anyway!"

Ye Xiao was shocked. He then seriously said, "You are welcome! A thank you from other people may be meaningless to me, but from you, it is truly hard earned. That makes it meaningful already!"

They stopped talking after this.

Master Bai was making tea concentratedly. Ye Xiao was watching him.

After a while, the water boiled.

Master Bai took a piece of ice from the space ring and then put the pot on it.

After a while, he took away the pot. He opened the tea bag and then picked six leaves carefully from it. He smiled. "Although, you asked to drink this tea yourself, but you didn't say that nobody can drink with you this time. It is always good to have someone as company when drinking tea."

"So, this time, as a company to you, I will drink it too. Let's say I benefit from association with you." Master Bai smiled.

Ye Xiao laughed. "Finally, you got me. You take advantage of me once then."

They looked at each other and smiled.

The two of them, one was determined to ruin the world, while the other determined to protect it. They were against each other, however, at this moment, they were like best friends sitting together, laughing sincerely.

The two tea cups were both made from the white and crystal Heaven's Jade.

Each cup had three leaves inside. The leaves looked grey with villus. It really didn't look special in any way. It didn't look better

than any normal tea that people were drinking at home.

The hot water was poured into the cups.

The three leaves kept rolling in the water.

"Do you know why I love tea?" Master Bai's hands were steady. The hot water kept pouring into the cup gradually.

Ye Xiao looked at the leaves rolling in the cup. He spoke in a low voice, "I don't know why you love tea. I know when I drink tea, the only thing I care is the mood."

"If I don't have that mood, I would rather not do it."

Ye Xiao looked at the hot, reeky tea and blandly spoke.

"Maybe this is the difference between two personalities," Master Bai spoke in a deep voice, "you enjoy the process, while I care about the overall situation... When I drink tea, I taste a life one time."

"A leaf to be made into tea is like a man to be born to the world. As time flies, it is no more sentimental. It becomes obscure. When the hot water washed it, it becomes vivid again... It starts to produce the scent that only belongs to itself. The scent doesn't last long though. After rolling a few times in the water, the scent is gone. It becomes a walking dead piece. At the end, it becomes nothing. A leaf from a branch is thrown away and down in the mud. That is a corpse."

"Who can keep emitting lights and heats from the day he was born and even after he is dead?" Master Bai seemed to be asking himself and asking Ye Xiao at the same time. He casually answered himself, "No... None."

"This is tea. This is life." Master Bai looked at Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao's eyes were focused on the cup. He said, "Not really. Look at you. If you die now, even years after, there will be people talking about House of the Chaotic Storms. That, is the scent you left to the world."

Master Bai was shocked. "I am talking about life and death with you. You curse me to die earlier. What a company. Unbelievably unique..."

Ye Xiao was about to say something, but he stopped. Master Bai didn't say anything too.

They were both silent.

They were just looking at the leaves floating on the water in the cups.

The leaves were stretching slowly in the water.

A piece of green faintly showed up. After a while, it stretched

slowly... When it started to emit the wonderful scent to the air, the leaves started to show the colorful glow as Master Bai had said...

It was shining, like stars in the firmament. At this moment, it was like all the stars gathering to the cup.

Such beauty must not belong to the world!

And indescribable scent spread out...

When Ye Xiao smelled the scent, he felt like his soul was cheering. He felt like his bones were lighter. He didn't even drink it, yet he felt the energy inside his body were flooding!

It would burst and would explode at any second.

[I have only smelled the scent of it, yet it already made this happen? If I drink it, wouldn't it be even more powerful and marvelous?!] Ye Xiao was shocked.

...

Chapter 396: The Thrilled Brother Egg!

Now, his doubt about the source of this tea was gone too.

He looked up and saw Master Bai. Master Bai must have smelled the scent too. However, on Master Bai's face, there was only pain, regret and sorrow!

Ye Xiao understood it.

It was only a leaf from the Heavenly Destined Tree, yet it actually had such efficacy!

What if he ate the Heavenly Destined Fruit?

What if he make the fruit into the Innate Nature dan bead?!

What if he got the book of the Saint Stage martial art?

What then?

Normal people would not dare to even think about it.

Master Bai had missed such an opportunity.

The opportunity that would only show up every one hundred and thirty thousand years!

If Maser Bai felt good about it now, that would be real weird!

While Ye Xiao was thinking about it and Maser Bai was feeling sad about it...

Inside Ye Xiao's Boundless Space...

The egg was thrilled after being silent for quite a long time!

The egg jumped up dozens of meters high, hitting the wall and making a big sound!

It was so excited!

The urge, the thirst, it didn't even try to cover it.

- Bang, bang, bang. - Hitting the wall hundreds of times, it seemed never going to stop until the yolk came out from it!

How could Ye Xiao ignore such wildness.

The crashes inside the Space made him feel dizzy. Master Bai wouldn't hear it, but Ye Xiao couldn't endure it...

[This is so unbearable!

Do you have to be that pushing!]

Ye Xiao coughed. He tried to cover the noise. "Good tea!"

Then he picked up the cup and casually had some tea.

And then, an indescribable scent along with some spiritual qi rushed into his mouth. - Shoot! - Suddenly, a colorful spiritual qi was coming out from his mouth.

Ye Xiao kept his mouth closed and tried his best to swallow it.

However, the colorful qi rushed up again to his throat.

He looked like a drunk guy who was about to throw up but couldn't. He didn't know how to control it. It kept rushing up from down his belly!

Apparently his dantian, Jing and Mai were not strong enough to take the spiritual qi within a short time!

It rushed up, he swallowed it. It rushed up again, he swallowed it again...

He kept his mouth closed tight, not giving the qi a chance to flee!

[Damn it! This is such a god given opportunity. Such a fantastic

thing is actually its owner's sore point...

He actually doesn't want it!

That is some fortune that I may not be able to raise after eight lives efforts.

It must be a sin to waste even a bit of it.]

Master Bai finally got past the frustration in his heart. When he was about to drink the tea, he noticed Ye Xiao was in an embarrassing situation. He couldn't help but cough and spat out the tea in his mouth...

He held the cup and didn't drink again. He just looked at Ye Xiao with interest.

In his heart, he was counting.

[One, two, three...

If I count to ten and you still don't spit it out, I will say that you are truly a persevering man. However, I know you are going to spit it out after all.

You are never able to digest it by your current condition, your cultivation level, your capability!

Even though you want to, you will not be able to. What can you do about it?

If you forcibly hold it to yourself, it will lead to a severe reverse impact to you. If you make any mistake during that, you will die exploding. Do you think the tea that is made from the Heavenly Destined Tree easy to digest?]

Master Bai looked at him, gloating.

However, what happened next truly surprised him again!

After trying several times, suddenly... - Gurr... - Ye Xiao's eyes turned round like balls. His eyeballs were about to pop out. If not for the eye frames, they would shoot out from his head...

He was like a frog for a few seconds.

And then he opened his mouth. A spiritual qi came out and he angrily said, "Fxck!"

Master Bai was looking at him. Ye Xiao spat the qi out and it was all on Master Bai's face, firmly.

For Master Bai, it was such an insult. There was no slobber in the qi from Ye Xiao's mouth, but it was from the mouth! He had spat on Master Bai's face. Even though he didn't mean to, he did! He had to explain something!

However, Master Bai didn't care about the insult or anything about it. What happened just now was too abnormal to him. It was so unusual!

Inside the qi from Ye Xiao's mouth, there was no slobber and no colorful breath at all.

In other words, Ye Xiao had kept the raging colorful spiritual qi inside his body. Nothing fled!

Master Bai was stunned. It was so beyond logic and reality.

He was spat on the face hard, but he was only shocked.

He was shocked from deep inside his heart out!

[This guy... actually swallowed it?

He digested it?

With his current cultivation level, how could he digest the colorful spiritual qi from the Heavenly Destined Tea?]

Under Master Bai's watch, Feng Monarch sighed and took another sup of tea.

And then he drank it all...

Nothing was left in his cup!

And then he shook his head and cursed, "For fxck's sake!"

And then he took another sip, and then drank it up again...

Master Bai was astonished. For the first time, he felt that he was not wise enough!

[What... the hell is this?]

...

In fact, Ye Xiao kept cursing in his heart. He was also confused. [What the hell is going on? Isn't it too much?]

It turned out the egg kept jumping up and down in the Space. It kept hitting and making noise. Ye Xiao was beaten like hell. He nearly failed to hold it down. When he drank the tea for the first sup, the egg stopped.

It moved fast like lightning back to the plate and started to roll.

It rolled faster and faster, and at the end, it became like a stream of white light.

When Ye Xiao was messed by the colorful spiritual qi, not knowing whether to spit it or swallow it, the egg made its strike.

- Shoot! -

The enormous colorful spiritual qi suddenly disappeared inside his body!

There was nothing about over-loading, explosion or anything else. There was nothing. Nothing happened to his body, because the egg took every bit of it!

Ye Xiao was shocked while he was expecting to improve greatly in cultivation!

[What the hell? What is going on?]

...

Chapter 397: Can't Help...

He was confused, but he suddenly discovered that things were not finished yet. The egg started jumping up and down, hitting the walls after absorbing the spiritual qi from the tea. It was basically torturing Ye Xiao from inside to outside... It was like it was saying: 'Give me more of that thing! Go drink more! Drink, drink, drink, drink, drink!'

'I will hit you down if you don't! I will hit the yolk out of you or hit the yolk out of me!'

Ye Xiao felt dizzy being hit. In his spiritual mind, he said, "Bastard! You want it. That's fine. I can't digest that much anyway. But you have to leave a bit for me! How could the landholder not be left some grain. Aren't you too greedy..."

The egg was rolling in the air, like it was flattering him and felt sorry for it.

It seemed it was saying... 'I totally forgot. Sorry. I will leave you some. I promise! I surely will!'

So Ye Xiao had another sip.

And then it happened again. He started struggling with the qi in his throat again...

The egg rolled fast again. It was spinning real fast and absorbing

the colorful spiritual qi. After that, it started to hit the wall again to urge Ye Xiao...

Ye Xiao didn't hurry. He had his cut this time. The egg promised him. As such, he decided to digest it first. He wanted to feel how it was like to take the colorful spiritual qi. However, when he scanned it with his spiritual mind, he found nothing.

[Nothing?

No way!]

He took a closer look and nearly passed out because of anger.

Well, the egg did keep its promise. It didn't take it all. It left him some, but it was just tiny tiny small bit of it really!

A narrow stream of colorful spiritual qi which was just the size as a hair was dangling in his Jing and Mai...

All that enormous amount of qi was gone, leaving just this bit!

"That is what you save for me? Why don't you just take it all! Are you just trying to send me away?!" Ye Xiao shouted in his spiritual mind. He would rather throw the egg into a pot and boil it. "What difference does it make?!"

The egg jumped up and down flatteringly, and it urged again, 'Look

I am sorry... But you have to drink more please...’

Ye Xiao held the anger in his belly. Deep in his heart, he knew that benefiting the egg was benefiting himself. He was upset about it, but he understood the situation. That was reality he had to take. So he just sipped a of it. The egg started to move again. This time, it left more for Ye Xiao.

However, if there was a hundred portion of the colorful spiritual qi, Ye Xiao got one of it!

That was not a small amount though.

Ye Xiao actually felt satisfied that the egg, the chariest out of the chariest, actually gave him this much...

In other words, the portion that he got had already contained as much as he could handle.

If it gave him more, maybe he would cry out for help and beg the egg to absorb more for him. That would be embarrassing!

Time and time again he drank, the cup of tea was finished.

Three leaves of Heavenly Destined Tree lied in the bottom of the tea cup. They were shining colorful glow, splendid and magnificent.

Ye Xiao looked up and gasped in admiration. "Excellent tea indeed. Unique and excellent."

Master Bai was staring at him with astonishment. He didn't seem like going to refill the tea cup.

Ye Xiao laughed and spoke in astonishment, "Great! I will do it myself. Let me do it..."

And then he grabbed the teapot in front of Master Bai and refilled the cup for himself. Suddenly, the colorful glow shined again. It was as beautiful as it had been earlier.

Ye Xiao took up the cup and took one sip after another.

The egg was spinning, rolling in the Space. It was hard to tell if it was spinning itself or it was pinned...

Finally, when Ye Xiao refilled the sixth time, the colorful glow disappeared in the cup. It became like a cup of normal tea, spreading normal scent. There was no more enormous spiritual qi...

Maybe now they started to drink real tea?

Ye Xiao clicked his tongue. He raised the cup and took a sip.

The egg was still spinning...

The scent of the tea got into the egg.

The next moment, the egg started shaking. And then it span in reverse direction. It actually spat out tray...

‘I don’t want this!’

‘I don’t want anything not nonsuch!’

"Heh, heh. Monarch Feng is an extraordinary man indeed." Master Bai elegantly took up the cup and took a sip. Hie eyes was full of smiling. "You can even digest the essence of the Heavenly Destined Tea within seconds. Amazing."

At the moment, Ye Xiao looked like grinning. It didn’t look good though...

[What is he doing?]

Master Bai changed expression on face. He was cautious now. [He is not going to spit again, is he? I can’t be spat on again!]

And then he only heard...

- Puff! -

- Puff puff! -

A series of sounds kept sounding.

Shameless like Feng Monarch, he blushed and felt embarrassed.

He had drunk too much of the tea. He didn't know why he would fart dozens of times!

That was fine though. It was human's nature to fart anyway. How could one hold it so hard!

However, the fart was not only in good smell, but also with some dim glowing rainbow color...

Such a splendid scene. What a shame that there was only Master Bai who had seen it!

"Cough..." Ye Xiao threw up his hands, "Well, that... I held it up here, but couldn't hold it down there..."

Master Bai was just about to drink that tea. Suddenly, the expression on his face turned rather strange!

It was like he wanted to throw up immediately...

Master Bai could swear that after all he had experience in his long

life, this was the first time he had such feeling! The man in front of him was so depressing to him...

However, the truth proved that he was right about this man. [He used some special method to take all that spiritual qi, but he cannot digest it all. Even though he has absorbed some, it was just a tiny part of it. The other must be let go with the... urh... fart...

But... That is sick!]

Master Bai was disabled and weak at the moment, but deep inside he was a super cultivator who was beyond normal people's league. The filthy gas from human bodies was something he hadn't been experienced for many years. It was so strange for him now. Noble as him, nobody dared to do such a thing in front of him. What Ye Xiao did really had made him feel speechless!

However, Ye Xiao was quite embarrassed himself. [What the hell is going on! That is so shameful today... Well, luckily, it is Feng Zhiling who is disgraced, not me...]

...

Chapter 398: A Cup of Tea Ruined the Destiny!

[Well, let Feng Zhiling bear the shame... I am Ye Xiao!]

Thinking this way, Ye Xiao felt settled about it. He even felt that it was a delightful thing to get the clean and elegant Master Bai smell his... that thing!

It was said that fart was the qi of body. One could never hold it. There was another saying. Who farts, who laughs; who smells, who dejected!

It was some good sayings. It fits really well with the current scene!

Master Bai was dejected at the moment.

He put down the tea that he only had a sip. He didn't want to drink anymore. He lost the mood. However, Master Bai he was, Master Bai he acted. He adjusted his emotion and smiled again. "This tea. How do you like it?"

Ye Xiao took a deep breath in and said, "Good. Fantastic. Unique and incredible."

[Good?]

Master Bai saw him breathing in deeply, so he twisted the lips. [Yes it is good. But why do you have to breath like that? Don't you know you have just farted a million times right there? It is still in the air now! It smells not bad, but it is fart after all! Do you have any special habit...]

Ye Xiao didn't care about those. He didn't know the thoughts in Master Bai's mind.

At the moment, he was thinking about another problem.

"In fact, you don't have to give me this tea." Ye Xiao couldn't think it through, so he asked frankly, "Even though it is your sore point in your heart, you don't have to take it out... Why did you do it?"

"You want to know why?" Master Bai smiled in a mysterious way, but he seemed helpless too.

"You want to know the reason?"

"Sure."

Master Bai leaned back to the chair. His pretty eyebrows shook.

"An opportunity may not always be an opportunity. In fact, when you miss an opportunity, it may become a barrier. Since I met that tree, my cultivation process became slower and slower. I kept running into bottlenecks. That was something that had never

happened to me before that. Every time when I think about the old days, I sigh. I hate it, whether I am lucky or not." Master Bai smiled blandly and peacefully spoke, "I wanted to give it away, to completely cut the opportunity."

"However, for all these years, no one deserved it. In fact, there has been no one that I dare to give him this thing."

"If I give it to people in the realm where I am from, even if he is my own brother, he would lock me up and ask for more. Such a supernatural thing is something nobody would resist. Everyone wants it. I have it, so I will end up a target to them. I will be a fool who kill myself!"

There was pain in his eyes, but it disappeared soon.

"Today, you came. In this low realm, you broke my Illusory Sky Array. That is destiny. Besides, I have promised something that it is hard for me to keep. You made your shameless request, and I couldn't break my promise. And if I want to keep my words, I have to..."

"That moment, I realized, it is not my destiny to have this. It is yours. However, the heavens will use my hand to give it to you." Master Bai sighed. "So, this is gods' will!"

"I don't think it is though. It is simply how the conversation went. Why do you come with such conclusion? It may not be true." Ye Xiao frowned.

"The heaven's will is never predictable. If you are not destined, the conversation wouldn't come this way. If you are not destined, you should have died in explosion in your body when you drank the tea, as you are weak in cultivation."

Master Bai blandly smiled. "Maybe it is still too difficult to understand. When you reach a certain level, you will know. One should really not talk recklessly. Every word may change the heaven's will. Everything you say may change your life completely."

"So it is my sore point with me, but your destined luck with you."

"I am giving you your own destiny, also my sore point." Master Bai smiled. "Maybe you don't know, but when I decided to give it to you, I was relieved like I could fly. For me, I have no destiny like this, why should I pretend I do!"

Ye Xiao was quiet. He said, "I think I can understand it. Things go as god planned, not us."

Master Bai laughed coldly.

Ye Xiao said, "However, there must be other reasons."

Master Bai was silent.

There was of course other reasons.

However, he would not tell Ye Xiao now.

Whoever was destined to see the Heavenly Destined Tree would only have one chance to see it.

No one ever saw it twice!

Never!

Master Bai got a sore point in heart after he saw it, yet now he gave it to Feng Zhiling like it was Feng Zhiling who missed the chance.

He then could be free from the 'one time limited' curse.

Thus, the furthest for Feng Zhiling to reach, he would only get as close as to drink this tea.

He had it, so he wouldn't have the chance to see the tree again.

For Master Bai, he had changed the heaven's will. The mark on him representing that he had used up the opportunity was removed. In other words, he had gotten another chance to see the tree again!

It was a great opportunity for him!

He had seen the tree before, so he knew the area where the tree was located. He could recognize the leaf of the tree.

He was more possible to benefit from the tree now!

When the leaves was on that tree, it was just the same with normal trees!

There wouldn't be a colorful glow around it...

Eighty percent of the people who had met the tree wouldn't recognize it.

Master Bai realized that Feng Monarch had the destiny to see the tree when he first met him. That was why he had to ruin his opportunity!

What he offered to Ye Xiao seemed great to others!

It was a great thing to have for Ye Xiao though. He had the destiny, but he might not be possible to activate this destiny. He might never see the Heavenly Destined Tree in the future. Even if he saw the tree, he would very likely miss it because he had never met it before. That was why Ye Xiao truly had gotten a lot this time, although what he got was so much less than what the tree could give him!

For Master Bai, he was just giving up a few leaves. That was it.

The key was... after Feng Monarch got the leaves, he would never have the chance to meet the Heavenly Destined Tree!

Master Bai was destroying a destined man!

He was destroying an enemy that could threaten him!

A cup of tea ruined the destiny!

He would never tell Ye Xiao the truth.

He would just let Feng Zhiling believe that he had gotten a great gift.

Who got the greater gift, however, only time could prove!

...

Chapter 399: What He Aspired Most

What He Aspired Most

A stream of light flashed in Master Bai's eyes.

[Besides, nobody knew whether he could survive the crisis in the Chen-Xing City this time. If he dies, that will be a relief. A dead destined man. What can he do to harm. Such destiny means nothing to a dead man anyway...]

...

In the Space.

The egg was delighted. It was flying round and round after absorbing all the colorful spiritual qi.

If somebody understood its language, he might find out it was saying, 'I found it... That guy is still living. Great! Wonderful! Fantastic...'

'Now I have a clue leading to you. I won't give it up. Up to the sky, down to hell, I will find you. Ahhhhh... I will eat all your leaves! Eat all your fruits! Eat every piece of your essence! Ahhhhhh...'

'I have been longing for it for eras. Ahhhh...'

The egg was rolling excitedly!

‘As long as that tree is still there, I will find it!’

‘Humph! You are nothing but a tree that was punished by the heaven’s nature. Do you think you can get away from me? Yayyyy...’

...

"Brother Feng’s high morality is truly reaching up to the clouds. You are a man who keeps his words. Now that it is a time of chaos and disturbance, you still remember your promise and come for my legs. Bai Chen truly admire you," Master Bai spoke casually and pushed the tea bag to Ye Xiao.

"This is nothing but just a small bag of tea. It is helping me to take it anyway... With respect, I give it to you. Please take it."

Ye Xiao looked at the small tea bag. He was blank in his brain though.

He had been joking about this. He never expected Master Bai would actually give him this unique treasure in the world!

In one hand, Ye Xiao was clear. [This must be a unique marvelous treasure in the world! I can’t let go of such chance!

I might never have the same opportunity in the future.]

On the other hand, he felt that there must be something Master Bai didn't tell him. Otherwise, he wouldn't use give him such great thing so easily. He must have other plans about it.

Whatever Master Bai was planning might not be good to him.

However, he didn't know what Master Bai was thinking.

He thought for a while and then said, "Alright. Since you are showing such kindness to me, I won't refuse it. It will be impolite to refuse it. I shall accept it with respect."

He reached his hand to grabbed the tea bag.

Who knew what would happen in the future anyway?

Now that there was something valuable in front of him, why shouldn't he take it?

Whether it was good to accept it or not, only time could tell!

"By the way, did you just say you need to keep one leaf for yourself? For memory?" Ye Xiao said.

"No need. I have already kept one." Master Bai blandly smiled and looked to the cup in front of him. It had no colorful glow anymore.

"I see. You are generous."

Ye Xiao turned over his hand and put the tea into his space ring.

He could never just put it into the Space.

Once it entered the space, even though the Cosmic Hades wouldn't burst, the egg would use it all at once. Maybe it would just chew and swallow it all...

Ye Xiao reckoned that it would ten thousand percent arouse the burst of the Cosmic Hades!

If it burst, he would never be able to handle it, considering his current condition. He might be frozen forever until he became a pile of ice dregs!

"Sometimes, it is very strange," Ye Xiao spoke slowly, "especially after I saw you, things became stranger. Elegant and powerful as you, you shouldn't be in this mortal messy world. Even though you want to play games here, you don't have to play it again and again, so many times."

Master Bai nodded and slowly said, "That should be true. However, one should always have his reasons to do things."

He blandly looked at Ye Xiao. "In fact, you are also strange. In this very desperate time of yours, you actually came to fulfill your promise to deal with my legs, and I am your enemy. What for?"

Ye Xiao twisted his face and said, "There is only one thing I aspire in my life."

Master Bai was interested. He asked, "What is it?"

Ye Xiao didn't emphasize 'in my life' while he was speaking. Master Bai didn't know that there was something behind these words.

Ye Xiao coldly spoke, "What I aspire... in my life, maybe there are people who betray me, set me up, but I won't offend others forwardly. Whoever mess with me, I won't let him go. Whoever help me, I will return the favor! My promise, I will surely keep it."

"My word is valuable and tough like gold."

"I can be shameless, indelicate, I can do whatever it takes to reach my purpose, but whatever I promise, I will do it. No matter who I promise to, enemy or friend."

"My ambition is... when I close my eyes, I won't feel regret!"

Ye Xiao blandly spoke, with his eyes full of glows.

No matter who he was talking to, he would say it with confidence and emotions!

At this moment, it reminded him the promises he made in his previous life. Those were the ones he had failed to fulfill.

He thought about the person who was hurt because of him...

He was now doing it for her!

[For you, I make my change this life. I make the promise and I shall keep it. Can you even hear me?

‘If there is a next life, I promise I will accompany you to travel the world.’

Do you remember?]

Master Bai heard him. He looked at Feng Monarch and the luster on his face. He was sure Feng Monarch was sincere, that he meant every word he said!

It was real that this was what he would purchase in his life!

"No regret..." Master Bai murmured and laughed bitterly.

[This Feng Zhiling, he can make such promise. Can I?

Can I?]

Suddenly, he actually felt jealous about it.

Ye Xiao had given Master Bai many 'first times' this day. The first time to be spat on the face, to be troubled, to smell that smelly thing, and to be jealous...

"How could that be an easy thing to do..." Master Bai sighed lightly.

...

Chapter 400: Aren't You Afraid?

"So you came for my legs during this time? Only to keep... your promise?" Master Bai looked at Feng Monarch with sharp eyes and said, "Maybe you are afraid that I will die in this chaos that I made myself? That you will fail to fulfill it?"

Ye Xiao smiled. "It doesn't matter. What matters is that I have come now."

Master Bai wouldn't let go of this topic. He asked, "You know all the troubles you are facing today is because of me, right?"

"I know that," Ye Xiao frankly answered.

"Then you should know that if you die, no matter under whose swords, you die in my hands, right?" Master Bai asked again.

"I know that too," Ye Xiao calmly spoke.

"Then you still came to cure my legs?" Master Bai frowned. He was confused.

"What you said has nothing to do with me curing your legs. To cure your legs, that is my promise. I made the promise myself," Ye Xiao peacefully spoke, "what happens in the future cannot change the truth that has happened. Promise is promise. Someone has to keep it."

"No matter what happens next, it has nothing to do with my promise!"

Ye Xiao smiled. "This is my way. No matter how others think about this. This is who I am."

Master Bai was silent. He said, "In fact, you are the kind of people I don't like. You are making your lives too heavy. You are living with too many restraints. You just cannot be casual and elegant. Don't you feel tired?!"

"However, I have to admit that people like you must be living in happiness. You are tired, but you are comfortable inside. You have your own happiness." Master Bai raised his eyebrows like he had put down some distracting thoughts in his mind. He smiled casually.

Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "It is useless to talk too much. No matter how good I am, how much you admire me, you won't give up collapsing the world. It will only bring us sorrow! Come on. Let me see your divine punishment wound. Lets see how bad it is now."

Master Bai smiled. "Well said."

He smiled and reached out his hand.

He had pale hands with long fingers.

It didn't look like a hand of a man. It was more like a soft and

pretty hand of a girl.

It was just laid on the white-jade table quietly.

It had no intent of defense against Ye Xiao at all.

If a cultivator's pulse was caught by his enemy, it meant he had put his life in the enemy's hand.

However, Master Bai reached his hand to the man that he hated the most.

He was undefended at all.

Ye Xiao grabbed his wrist casually.

At this moment, Ye Xiao raised his head and looked into Master Bai's eyes.

Master Bai was casual as usual. He showed peacefulness on his face, and he acted elegantly. He smiled and looked back at him. Nothing changed on his face.

"Well, aren't you afraid that I would just take your life by one palm strike now?" Ye Xiao asked.

"No." Master Bai smiled strangely with a profound look. "You

wouldn't do it."

Ye Xiao smiled and didn't talk much. He transferred the spiritual power into the wrist.

He went through Master Bai's Jing and Mai quickly.

After just that, he was shocked!

[What did I see? Is it still human's Jing and Mai? Is it even possible?!

If the spiritual power I put into it is a drop of water, the spiritual power in his Jing and Mai is at least an ocean, a sky full of stars!]

That was a huge difference between them, like sky and earth!

To explain it as sky and earth was to humiliate Master Bai and overpraise Ye Xiao indeed!

They were not even in the same league!

With such huge gap between them, even if Ye Xiao had grabbed his heart, as long as Master Bai didn't allow him, he would never be able to hurt it, let alone he was just holding his wrist!

There was some strong restraints inside his body to keep the

spiritual power from activated, but he could still use them to save his own life.

If somebody attacked Master Bai, the spiritual qi in him would fight back automatically. The power of it was enough to destroy most of the people in the world, even in the Qing-Yun Realm!

That was some fatal counterattack!

Ye Xiao finally understood the strange smile on Master Bai's face... In this world, no one could truly hurt him!

"The power of the divine punishment..." Ye Xiao finally understood what it was like.

Every joint of the Jing and Mai in Master Bai's body was covered by a mass of purple qi. The great spiritual power of the purple qi blocked the path of the spiritual power inside his Jing and Mai.

There were no less than a thousand masses of purple qi in his body!

The purple qi was full of the aura of divine nature.

If anybody dared to break the purple qi, he would definitely get the divine punishment himself!

That was not something a man could endure! No matter who that

man was!

To break it was to break the rule of heavens!

Ye Xiao grinned. "The divine punishment in you... is truly beyond my imagination."

Master Bai smiled blandly and made a joke, "Is it so easy to deal with?"

"Easy?" Ye Xiao bitterly laughed. "If this is easy, I don't know what can be difficult. To be honest, I don't even know where to start!"

"That's right. What you are checking, in my Jing and Mai, is the divine punishment on me." Master Bai casually spoke, "Other than that, there are something you cannot see. You are just not in the level. It isn't about your sight condition though. Don't worry about it."

Ye Xiao frowned. "I am weak and in a low level of cultivation. Surely, you wouldn't respect me with that. But what I am good at is dan-making. It barely has anything to do with one's cultivation level. The problem from me is, do you have the materials I want yet?"

He sighed. "There is another thing. My idea earlier might be too optimistic. According to the current situation, even though the Heaven Seizing Dan is successfully made, it may not work as well

as I expected. I need to be frank about this to you before I start."

Master Bai blandly nodded. "I understand. Our deal is that you make the Heaven Seizing Dan beads for me in time. The efficacy of the dan beads are not included... It is already a very difficult thing to just make the Heaven Seizing Dan beads."

...